

Herbert Strang's
Library

OLIVER TWIST

By
CHARLES
DICKENS

HUMPHREY-MILFORD
OXFORD-UNIVERSITY
PRESS
LONDON

1937



LIST OF VOLUMES IN HERBERT STRANG'S LIBRARY

Good Wives	..	..	..	By Louisa Alcott
Little Women	..	..	..	By Louisa Alcott
Arabian Nights, Stories from the				
The Coral Island	..	..	By R. M. Ballantyne	
The Lighthouse	..	..	By R. M. Ballantyne	
The Young Fur Traders			By R. M. Ballantyne	
Lorna Doone	..	..	By R. D. Blackmore	
Curiosities of Natural History			By Frank Buckland	
Alice's Adventures in Wonderland			By Lewis Carroll	
Adventures of Don Quixote	..	..	By Cervantes	
Captain Cook's Voyages				
What Katy Did	..	..	By Susan Coolidge	
What Katy Did at School			By Susan Coolidge	
What Katy Did Next	..	..	By Susan Coolidge	
The Lamplighter	..	..	By Maria S. Cummins	
Robinson Crusoe	..	..	..	By Daniel Defoe
David Copperfield	..	..	..	By Charles Dickens
Oliver Twist	..	..	..	By Charles Dickens
Great Expectations	..	..	..	By Charles Dickens
Barnaby Rudge	..	..	..	By Charles Dickens
Christmas Carol and The Chimes			By Charles Dickens	
Silas Marner	..	..	..	By George Eliot
Cranford	..	..	..	By Mrs. Gaskell
Stories from Grimm				
Tales from Hans Andersen				
Tanglewood Tales	..	..	By Nathaniel Hawthorne	
A Wonder Book	..	..	By Nathaniel Hawthorne	
The Boy's Country Book			By William Howitt	
Tom Brown's Schooldays			By Thomas Hardy	
The Life of Columbus	..	..	By Washington Irving	
Adventures in the Rifle Brigade			By Sir John Kincaid	
The Heroes	..	..	By Charles Kingsley	
Westward Ho!	..	..	By Charles Kingsley	
The Water Babies			By Charles Kingsley	
Peter the Whaler	..	..	By W. H. G. Kingston	
True Blue	..	..	By W. H. G. Kingston	
Tales from Shakespeare			By Charles and Mary Lamb	
Children of the New Forest			By Captain Marryat	
Mr. Shipman Easy	..	..	By Captain Marryat	
The Queen of Wellington			By W. H. Maxwel	
Battles of the Peninsular War			By Sir William Napier	
Mungo Park's Travels				
Ivanhoe			By Sir Walter Scott	
Quentin Durward	..	..	By Sir Walter Scott	
The Talisman	..	..	By Sir Walter Scott	
The Life of Nelson	..	..	By Robert Southey	
Family Robinson	..	..	..	By J. R. Wyss
To the Vide Wide World	..	..	By Elizabeth Wetherell	
Quare Day	..	..	By Elizabeth Wetherell	
The Chair	..	..	By Mrs. Henry Wood	
A Book of English Deeds	..	..	By Charlotte M. Yonge	
The Heir of Redclyffe	..	..	By Charlotte M. Yonge	
Treasures of English Verse				

HUMPHREY MILFORD, OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS.

REPRINTED 1937 IN GREAT BRITAIN BY
MORRISON AND GIBB LTD, LONDON AND EDINBURGH

Oliver Twist

chaises, through turnpike gates at which they paid a toll : when chimneys were swept by climbing boys, and transportation overseas was still one of the penalties of crime. These things have passed away, like the horrors of the workhouse system that Dickens so graphically exposed. And though there are still, no doubt, "thieves' kitchens," in which lads are taught their trade, we may hope that the worst features of Fagin's school of crime are unlikely to be reproduced in the society of the present day. Dickens's object was never merely to amuse his readers ; he always sought to awaken their sympathy for the victims of poverty and injustice, to enlist them on the side of right against wrong ; and many of the improvements in social conditions that marked the latter half of the nineteenth century may be partly traced to the stirring of the public conscience by the works of this great-hearted writer.

Like other very long stories in this library, the present work has been abridged. An outline of Dickens's life has been given in a previous volume.

The reader will doubtless notice here and there peculiarities of punctuation. Dickens had very individual ideas on this matter, and his own punctuation has been followed.

II. S.

OLIVER TWIST

CHAPTER I

AMONG other public buildings in a certain town, which for many reasons it will be prudent to refrain from mentioning, and to which I will assign no fictitious name, there is one anciently common to most towns, great or small: to wit, a workhouse; and in this workhouse was born; on a day and date which I need not trouble myself to repeat, inasmuch as it can be of no possible consequence to the reader, in this stage of the business at all events; the item of mortality whose name is prefixed to the head of this chapter.

For a long time after it was ushered into this world of sorrow and trouble, by the parish surgeon, it remained a matter of considerable doubt whether the child would survive to bear any name at all. The fact is, that there was considerable difficulty in inducing Oliver to take upon himself the office of respiration,—a troublesome practice, but one which custom has rendered necessary to our easy existence; and for some time he lay gasping on a little flock mattress, rather unequally poised between this world and the next. Now, if, during this brief period, Oliver had been surrounded by careful grandmothers, anxious aunts, experienced nurses, and doctors of profound wisdom, he would most inevitably and indubitably have been killed in no time. There being nobody by, however, but a pauper old woman, and a parish surgeon who did such matters by contract; Oliver and Nature fought out the point between them. The result was, that, after a few struggles, Oliver breathed, sneezed, and proceeded to advertise to the inmates of the workhouse the fact of a new burden having been imposed upon the parish, by setting up as loud a cry as could

Oliver Twist

reasonably have been expected from a male infant who had not been possessed of that very useful appendage, a voice, for a much longer space of time than three minutes and a quarter.

As Oliver gave this first proof of the free and proper action of his lungs, the patchwork coverlet which was carelessly flung over the iron bedstead, rustled ; the pale face of a young woman was raised feebly from the pillow ; and a faint voice imperfectly articulated the words, "Let me see the child, and die."

The surgeon had been sitting with his face turned towards the fire : giving the palms of his hands a warm and a rub alternately. As the young woman spoke, he rose, and advancing to the bed's head, said, with more kindness than might have been expected of him :

"Oh, you must not talk about dying yet."

"Lor bless her dear heart, no ! " interposed the nurse. "When she has lived as long as I have, sir, and had thirteen children of her own, and all on 'em dead except two, and them in the wurkus with me, she'll know better than to take on in that way, bless her dear heart ! Think what it is to be a mother, there's a dear young lamb, do."

Apparently this consolatory perspective of a mother's prospects failed in producing its due effect. The patient shook her head, and stretched out her hand towards the child.

The surgeon deposited it in her arms. She imprinted her cold white lips passionately on its forehead ; passed her hands over her face ; gazed wildly round ; shuddered ; fell back—and died.

Oliver cried lustily. If he could have known that he was an orphan, left to the tender mercies of churchwardens and overseers, perhaps he would have cried the louder.

The parish authorities magnanimously and humanely resolved that Oliver should be "farmed," or, in other words, that he should be despatched to a branch-workhouse some three miles off, where twenty or thirty other juvenile offenders against the poor-laws, rolled about the floor all day, without the inconvenience of too much food or too much clothing, under the parental superintendence of an elderly female, who received the culprits

Oliver Twist

at and for the consideration of sevenpence-halfpenny per small head per week. Sevenpence-halfpenny's worth per week is a good round diet for a child ; a great deal may be got for sevenpence-halfpenny, quite enough to overload its stomach, and make it uncomfortable. The elderly female was a woman of wisdom and experience ; she knew what was good for children ; and she had a very accurate perception of what was good for herself. So, she appropriated the greater part of the weekly stipend to her own use, and consigned the rising parochial generation to even a shorter allowance than was originally provided for them.

Oliver Twist's ninth birthday found him a pale thin child, somewhat diminutive in stature, and decidedly small in circumference. But nature or inheritance had implanted a good sturdy spirit in Oliver's breast. It had had plenty of room to expand, thanks to the spare diet of the establishment ; and perhaps to this circumstance may be attributed his having any ninth birthday at all. Be this as it may, however, it *was* his ninth birthday ; and he was keeping it in the coal-cellar with a select party of two other young gentlemen, who, after participating with him in a sound thrashing, had been locked up for atrociously presuming to be hungry, when Mrs. Mann, the good lady of the house, was unexpectedly startled by the apparition of Mr. Bumble, the beadle, striving to undo the wicket of the garden-gate.

“ Goodness gracious ! Is that you, Mr. Bumble, sir ? ” said Mrs. Mann, thrusting her head out of the window in well-affected ecstasies of joy. “ (Susan, take Oliver and them two brats upstairs, and wash 'em directly.) My heart alive ! Mr. Bumble, how glad I am to see you, sure-ly ! ”

Now, Mr. Bumble was a fat man, and a choleric ; so, instead of responding to this open-hearted salutation in a kindred spirit, he gave the little wicket a tremendous shake, and then bestowed upon it a kick which could have emanated from no leg but a beadle's.

“ Lor, only think,” said Mrs. Mann, running out,— for the three boys had been removed by this time,— “ only think of that ! That I should have forgotten that the gate was bolted on the inside, on account of

Oliver Twist

them dear children ! Walk in, sir ; walk in, pray, Mr Bumble, do, sir."

Mrs. Mann ushered the beadle into a small parlour with a brick floor ; placed a seat for him ; and officiously deposited his cocked-hat and cane on the table before him. Mr. Bumble wiped from his forehead the perspiration which his walk had engendered, glanced complacently at the cocked-hat, and smiled. Yes, he smiled. Beadles are but men : and Mr. Bumble smiled.

" Now about business," said the beadle, taking out a leathern pocket-book. " The child that was half-baptized Oliver Twist, is nine year old to-day."

" Bless him ! " interposed Mrs. Mann, inflaming her left eye with the corner of her apron.

" And notwithstanding a offered reward of ten pound which was afterwards increased to twenty pound ; notwithstanding the most superlative, and, I may say, supernat'r'al exertions on the part of this parish," said Bumble, " we have never been able to discover his father or what was his mother's name."

Mrs. Mann raised her hands in astonishment ; but added, after a moment's reflection, " How comes he to have any name at all, then ? "

The beadle drew himself up with great pride, and said, " I inventedit."

" You, Mr. Bumble ! "

" I, Mrs. Mann. We name our fondlings in alphabetical order. The last was a S,—Swubble, I named him. This was a T,—Twist, I named him. The next one as comes will be Unwin, and the next Vilkins. I have got names ready made to the end of the alphabet, and all the way through it again, when we come to Z."

" Why, you're quite a literary character, sir ! " said Mrs. Mann.

" Well, well," said the beadle, evidently gratified with the compliment ; " perhaps I may be. Perhaps I may be, Mrs. Mann. Oliver being now too old to remain here, the board have determined to have him back into the house. I have come out myself to take him there. So let me see him at once."

" I'll fetch him directly," said Mrs. Mann, leaving the room for that purpose. Oliver, having had by this time

Oliver Twist

as much of the outer coat of dirt which encrusted his face and hands, removed, as could be scrubbed off in one washing, was led into the room by his benevolent protectress.

"Make a bow to the gentleman, Oliver," said Mrs. Mann.

Oliver made a bow, which was divided between the beadle on the chair, and the cocked-hat on the table.

"Will you go along with me, Oliver?" said Mr. Bumble, in a majestic voice.

Oliver was about to say that he would go along with anybody with great readiness, when, glancing upward, he caught sight of Mrs. Mann, who had got behind the beadle's chair, and was shaking her fist at him with a furious countenance. He took the hint at once, for the fist had been too often impressed upon his body not to be deeply impressed upon his recollection.

"Will *she* go with me?" inquired poor Oliver.

"No, she can't," replied Mr. Bumble. "But she'll come and see you sometimes."

This was no very great consolation to the child. Young as he was, however, he had sense enough to make a faint of feeling great regret at going away. It was no very difficult matter for the boy to call tears into his eyes. Hunger and recent ill-usage are great assistants if you want to cry; and Oliver cried very naturally indeed. Mrs. Mann gave him a thousand embraces, and, what Oliver wanted a great deal more, a piece of bread and butter, lest he should seem too hungry when he got to the workhouse. With the slice of bread in his hand, and the little brown-cloth parish cap on his head, Oliver was then led away by Mr. Bumble from the wretched home where one kind word or look had never lighted the gloom of his infant years.

Mr. Bumble walked on with long strides; little Oliver, firmly grasping his gold-laced cuff, trotted beside him, inquiring at the end of every quarter of a mile whether they were "nearly there." To these interrogations Mr. Bumble returned very brief and snappish replies.

Oliver had not been within the walls of the workhouse a quarter of an hour, and had scarcely completed the demolition of a second slice of bread, when Mr.

Oliver Twist

Bumble, who had handed him over to the care of an old woman, returned ; and, telling him it was a board night, informed him that the board had said he was to appear before it forthwith.

Not having a very clearly defined notion of what a live board was, Oliver was rather astounded by this intelligence, and was not quite certain whether he ought to laugh or cry. He had no time to think about the matter, however ; for Mr. Bumble gave him a tap on the head, with his cane, to wake him up : and another on the back to make him lively : and bidding him follow, conducted him into a large whitewashed room, where eight or ten fat gentlemen were sitting round a table. At the top of the table, seated in an arm-chair rather higher than the rest, was a particularly fat gentleman with a very round, red face.

"Bow to the board," said Bumble. Oliver brushed away two or three tears that were lingering in his eyes ; and seeing no board but the table, fortunately bowed to that.

"What's your name, boy ?" said the gentleman in the high chair.

Oliver was frightened at the sight of so many gentlemen, which made him tremble : and the beadle gave him another tap behind, which made him cry. These two causes made him answer in a very low and hesitating voice ; whereupon a gentleman in a white waistcoat said he was a fool. Which was a capital way of raising his spirits, and putting him quite at his ease.

"Boy," said the gentleman in the high chair, "listen to me. You know you're an orphan, I suppose ?"

"What's that, sir ?" inquired poor Oliver.

"The boy *is* a fool—I thought he was," said the gentleman in the white waistcoat.

"Hush !" said the gentleman who had spoken first. "You know you've got no father or mother, and that you were brought up by the parish, don't you ?"

"Yes, sir," replied Oliver, weeping bitterly.

"What are you crying for ?" inquired the gentleman in the white waistcoat. And to be sure it was very extraordinary. What *could* the boy be crying for ?

"Well ! You have come here to be educated, and

Oliver Twist

taught a useful trade," said the red-faced gentleman in the high chair.

"So you'll begin to pick oakum to-morrow morning at six o'clock," added the surly one in the white waistcoat.

For the combination of both these blessings in the one simple process of picking oakum, Oliver bowed low by the direction of the beadle, and was then hurried away to a large ward: where, on a rough, hard bed, he sobbed himself to sleep.

Poor Oliver! He little thought, as he lay sleeping in happy unconsciousness of all around him, that the board had that very day arrived at a decision which would exercise the most material influence over all his future fortunes. But they had. And this was it:

The members of this board were very sage, deep, philosophical men; and when they came to turn their attention to the workhouse, they found out at once, what ordinary folks would never have discovered—the poor people liked it! It was a regular place of public entertainment for the poorer classes; a tavern where there was nothing to pay; a public breakfast, dinner, tea, and supper all the year round; a brick and mortar elysium, where it was all play and no work. "Oho!" said the board, looking very knowing; "we are the fellows to set this to rights; we'll stop it all, in no time." So, they established the rule, that all poor people should have the alternative (for they would compel nobody, not they) of being starved by a gradual process in the house, or by a quick one out of it. With this view, they contracted with the water-works to lay on an unlimited supply of water; and with a corn-factor to supply periodically small quantities of oatmeal; and issued three meals of thin gruel a day, with an onion twice a week, and half a roll on Sundays.

The room in which the boys were fed, was a large stone hall, with a copper at one end: out of which the master, dressed in an apron for the purpose, and assisted by one or two women, ladled the gruel at meal-times. Of this festive composition each boy had one porringer, and no more—except on occasions of great public rejoicing, when he had two ounces and a quarter of bread besides. The bowls never wanted washing. The boys

Oliver Twist

polished them with their spoons till they shone again : and when they had performed this operation (which never took very long, the spoons being nearly as large as the bowls), they would sit staring at the copper, with such eager eyes, as if they could have devoured the very bricks of which it was composed ; employing themselves, meanwhile, in sucking their fingers most assiduously, with the view of catching up any stray splashes of gruel that might have been cast thereon. Boys have generally excellent appetites. Oliver Twist and his companions suffered the tortures of slow starvation for three months : at last they got so voracious and wild with hunger, that one boy, who was tall for his age, and hadn't been used to that sort of thing (for his father had kept a small cook-shop), hinted darkly to his companions, that unless he had another basin of gruel *per diem*, he was afraid he might some night happen to eat the boy who slept next him, who happened to be a weakly youth of tender age. He had a wild, hungry eye ; and they implicitly believed him. A council was held ; lots were cast who should walk up to the master after supper that evening, and ask for more ; and it fell to Oliver Twist.

The evening arrived ; the boys took their places. The master, in his cook's uniform, stationed himself at the copper ; his pauper assistants ranged themselves behind him ; the gruel was served out ; and a long grace was said over the short commons. The gruel disappeared ; the boys whispered to each other, and winked at Oliver ; while his next neighbours nudged him. Child as he was, he was desperate with hunger, and reckless with misery. He rose from the table ; and advancing to the master, basin and spoon in hand, said : somewhat alarmed at his own temerity :

“Please, sir, I want some more.”

The master was a fat, healthy man ; but he turned very pale. He gazed in stupefied astonishment on the small rebel for some seconds, and then clung for support to the copper. The assistants were paralysed with wonder ; the boys with fear.

“What !” said the master at length, in a faint voice.

“Please, sir,” replied Oliver, “I want some more.”

Oliver Twist

The master aimed a blow at Oliver's head with the ladle ; pinioned him in his arms ; and shrieked aloud for the beadle.

The board were sitting in solemn conclave, when Mr. Bumble rushed into the room in great excitement, and addressing the gentleman in the high chair, said,

"Mr. Limbkins, I beg your pardon, sir ! Oliver Twist has asked for more !"

There was a general start. Horror was depicted on every countenance.

"For *more*!" said Mr. Limbkins. "Compose yourself, Bumble, and answer me distinctly. Do I understand that he asked for more, after he had eaten the supper allotted by the dietary ?"

"He did, sir," replied Bumble.

"That boy will be hung," said the gentleman in the white waistcoat. "I know that boy will be hung."

Nobody controverted the prophetic gentleman's opinion. An animated discussion took place. Oliver was ordered into instant confinement ; and a bill was next morning pasted on the outside of the gate, offering a reward of five pounds to anybody who would take Oliver Twist off the hands of the parish. In other words, five pounds and Oliver Twist were offered to any man or woman who wanted an apprentice to any trade, business, or calling.

CHAPTER II

FOR a week after the commission of the impious and profane offence of asking for more, Oliver remained a close prisoner in the dark and solitary room to which he had been consigned by the wisdom and mercy of the board. He cried bitterly all day ; and, when the long, dismal night came on, spread his little hands before his eyes to shut out the darkness, and crouching in the corner, tried to sleep : ever and anon waking with a start and tremble, and drawing himself closer and closer to the wall, as if to feel even its cold hard surface were a

Oliver Twist

protection in the gloom and loneliness which surrounded him.

It chanced one morning that Mr. Gamfield, chimney-sweep, went his way down the High Street, deeply cogitating in his mind his ways and means of paying certain arrears of rent, for which his landlord had become rather pressing. Mr. Gamfield's most sanguine estimate of his finances could not raise them within full five pounds of the desired amount; and, in a species of arithmetical desperation, he was alternately cudgelling his brains and his donkey, when, passing the workhouse, his eyes encountered the bill on the gate.

"Wo—o!" said Mr. Gamfield to the donkey.

The donkey was in a state of profound abstraction: wondering, probably, whether he was destined to be regaled with a cabbage-stalk or two when he had disposed of the two sacks of soot with which the little cart was laden; so, without noticing the word of command, he jogged onward.

Mr. Gamfield growled a fierce imprecation on the donkey, and, running after him, bestowed a blow on his head, which would inevitably have beaten in any skin but a donkey's. Then, catching hold of the bridle, he gave his jaw a sharp wrench, by way of gentle reminder that he was not his own master; and by these means turned him round. He then gave him another blow on the head, just to stun him till he came back again. Having completed these arrangements, he walked up to the gate, to read the bill.

The gentleman with the white waistcoat was standing at the gate with his hands behind him, after having delivered himself of some profound sentiments in the board-room. Having witnessed the little dispute between Mr. Gamfield and the donkey, he smiled joyously when that person came up to read the bill, for he saw at once that Mr. Gamfield was exactly the sort of master Oliver Twist wanted. Mr. Gamfield smiled, too, as he perused the document; for five pounds was just the sum he had been wishing for; and, as to the boy with which it was encumbered, Mr. Gamfield, knowing what the dietary of the workhouse was, well knew he would be a nice small pattern, just the very thing for register stoves. So, he

Oliver Twist

spelt the bill through again, from beginning to end ; and then, touching his fur cap in token of humility, accosted the gentleman in the white waistcoat.

" This here boy, sir, wot the parish wants to 'prentis," said Mr. Gamfield.

" Ay, my man," said the gentleman in the white waistcoat, with a condescending smile. " What of him ? "

" If the parish would like him to learn a right pleasant trade, in a good 'spectable chimbley-sweepin' bisness," said Mr. Gamfield, " I wants a 'prentis, and I am ready to take him."

" Walk in," said the gentleman in the white waistcoat. Mr. Gamfield having lingered behind, to give the donkey another blow on the head, and another wrench of the jaw, as a caution not to run away in his absence, followed the gentleman with the white waistcoat into the room where Oliver had first seen him.

" It's a nasty trade," said Mr. Limbkins, when Gamfield had again stated his wish.

" Young boys have been smothered in chimneys before now," said another gentleman.

" That's acause they damped the straw afore they lit it in the chimbley to make 'em come down agin," said Gamfield ; " that's all smoke, and no blaze ; whereas smoke ain't o' no use at all in making a boy come down, for it only sinds him to sleep, and that's wot he likes. Boys is very obstinat, and very lazy, gen'lmen, and there's nothink like a good hot blaze to make 'em come down with a run. It's humane too, gen'lmen, acause, even if they've stuck in the chimbley, roasting their feet makes 'em struggle to hextricate theirselves."

The gentleman in the white waistcoat appeared very much amused by this explanation ; but his mirth was speedily checked by a look from Mr. Limbkins. The board then proceeded to converse among themselves for a few minutes, but in so low a tone, that the words " saving of expenditure," " looked well in the accounts," " have a printed report published," were alone audible.

At length the whispering ceased ; and the members of the board, having resumed their seats and their solemnity, Mr. Limbkins said :

Oliver Twist

"We have considered your proposition, and we don't approve of it."

"Not at all," said the gentleman in the white waistcoat.

"Decidedly not," added the other members.

As Mr. Gamfield did happen to labour under the slight imputation of having bruised three or four boys to death already, it occurred to him that the board had, perhaps, in some unaccountable freak, taken it into their heads, that this extraneous circumstance ought to influence their proceedings. It was very unlike their general mode of doing business, if they had; but still, as he had no particular wish to revive the rumour, he twisted his cap in his hands, and walked slowly from the table.

"So you won't let me have him, gen'lmen?" said Mr. Gamfield, pausing near the door.

"No," replied Mr. Limbkins; "at least, as it's a nasty business, we think you ought to take something less than the premium we offered."

Mr. Gamfield's countenance brightened, as, with a quick step, he returned to the table, and said,

"What'll you give, gen'lmen? Come! Don't be too hard on a poor man. What'll you give?"

"I should say, three pound ten was plenty," said Mr. Limbkins.

"Ten shillings too much," said the gentleman in the white waistcoat.

"Come!" said Gamfield; "say four pound, gen'lmen. Say four pound, and you've got rid on him for good and all. There!"

"Three pound ten," repeated Mr. Limbkins, firmly.

"Come! I'll split the difference, gen'lmen," urged Gamfield. "Three pound fifteen."

"Not a farthing more," was the firm reply of Mr. Limbkins.

"You're desperate hard upon me, gen'lmen," said Gamfield, wavering.

"Pooh! pooh! nonsense!" said the gentleman in the white waistcoat. "He'd be cheap with nothing at all as a premium. Take him, you silly fellow! He's just the boy for you. He wants the stick, now and then: it'll do him good; and his board needn't come very

Oliver Twist

expensive, for he hasn't been over-fed since he was born. Ha ! ha ! ha ! ”

Mr. Gamfield gave an arch look at the faces round the table, and, observing a smile on all of them, gradually broke into a smile himself. The bargain was made. Mr. Bumble was at once instructed that Oliver Twist and his indentures were to be conveyed before the magistrate, for signature and approval, that very afternoon.

In pursuance of this determination, little Oliver, to his excessive astonishment, was released from bondage, and ordered to put himself into a clean shirt. He had hardly achieved this very unusual gymnastic performance, when Mr. Bumble brought him, with his own hands, a basin of gruel, and the holiday allowance of two ounces and a quarter of bread. At this tremendous sight, Oliver began to cry very piteously : thinking, not unnaturally, that the board must have determined to kill him for some useful purpose, or they never would have begun to fatten him up in that way.

“ Don't make your eyes red, Oliver, but eat your food and be thankful,” said Mr. Bumble, in a tone of impressive pomposity. “ You're a-going to be made a 'prentice of, Oliver.”

“ A 'prentice, sir ! ” said the child, trembling.

“ Yes, Oliver,” said Mr. Bumble. “ The kind and blessed gentlemen which is so many parents to you, Oliver, when you have none of your own : are a-going to 'prentice you : and to set you up in life, and make a man of you : although the expense to the parish is three pound ten ! --three pound ten, Oliver ! --seventy shillins—one hundred and forty sixpences ! —and all for a naughty orphan which nobody can't love.”

As Mr. Bumble paused to take breath, after delivering this address in an awful voice, the tears rolled down the poor child's face, and he sobbed bitterly.

“ Come,” said Mr. Bumble, somewhat less pompously, for it was gratifying to his feelings to observe the effect his eloquence had produced ; “ Come, Oliver ! Wipe your eyes with the cuffs of your jacket, and don't cry into your gruel ; that's a very foolish action, Oliver.” It certainly was, for there was quite enough water in it already.

Oliver Twist

On their way to the magistrate, Mr. Bumble instructed Oliver that all he would have to do, would be to look very happy, and say, when the gentleman asked him if he wanted to be apprenticed, that he should like it very much indeed ; both of which injunctions Oliver promised to obey : the rather as Mr. Bumble threw in a gentle hint, that if he failed in either particular, there was no telling what would be done to him. When they arrived at the office, he was shut up in a little room by himself, and admonished by Mr. Bumble to stay there, until he came back to fetch him.

There the boy remained, with a palpitating heart, for half an hour. At the expiration of which time Mr. Bumble thrust in his head, unadorned with the cocked-hat, and said aloud :

"Now, Oliver, my dear, come to the gentleman." As Mr. Bumble said this, he put on a grim and threatening look, and added, in a low voice, "Mind what I told you, you young rascal ! "

Oliver stared innocently in Mr. Bumble's face at this somewhat contradictory style of address ; but that gentleman prevented his offering any remark thereupon, by leading him at once into an adjoining room : the door of which was open. It was a large room, with a great window. Behind a desk, sat two old gentlemen with powdered heads : one of whom was reading the newspaper ; while the other was perusing, with the aid of a pair of tortoise-shell spectacles, a small piece of parchment which lay before him. Mr. Limbkins was standing in front of the desk on one side ; and Mr. Gamfield, with a partially washed face, on the other ; while two or three bluff-looking men, in top-boots, were lounging about.

The old gentleman with the spectacles gradually dozed off, over the little bit of parchment ; and there was a short pause, after Oliver had been stationed by Mr. Bumble in front of the desk.

"This is the boy, your worship," said Mr. Bumble.

The old gentleman who was reading the newspaper raised his head for a moment, and pulled the other old gentleman by the sleeve ; whereupon, the last-mentioned old gentleman woke up.

Oliver Twist

"Oh, is this the boy?" said the old gentleman.

"This is him, sir," replied Mr. Bumble. "Bow to the magistrate, my dear."

Oliver roused himself, and made his best obeisance.

"Well," said the old gentleman, "I suppose he's fond of chimney-sweeping?"

"He doats on it, your worship," replied Bumble; giving Oliver a sly pinch, to intimate that he had better not say he didn't.

"And he *will* be a sweep, will he?" inquired the old gentleman.

"If we was to bind him to any other trade to-morrow, he'd run away simultaneous, your worship," replied Bumble.

"And this man that's to be his master—you, sir—you'll treat him well, and feed him, and do all that sort of thing, will you?" said the old gentleman.

"When I says I will, I means I will," replied Mr. Gamfield doggedly.

"You're a rough speaker, my friend, but you look an honest, open-hearted man," said the old gentleman: turning his spectacles in the direction of the candidate for Oliver's premium, whose villainous countenance was a regular stamped receipt for cruelty. But the magistrate was half blind and half childish, so he couldn't reasonably be expected to discern what other people did.

"I hope I am, sir," said Mr. Gamfield, with an ugly leer.

"I have no doubt you are, my friend," replied the old gentleman: fixing his spectacles more firmly on his nose, and looking about him for the inkstand.

It was the critical moment of Oliver's fate. If the inkstand had been where the old gentleman thought it was, he would have dipped his pen into it, and signed the indentures, and Oliver would have been straight-way hurried off. But, as it chanced to be immediately under his nose, it followed, as a matter of course, that he looked all over his desk for it, without finding it; and happening in the course of his search to look straight before him, his gaze encountered the pale and terrified face of Oliver Twist: who, despite all the admonitory looks and pinches of Bumble, was regarding the repulsive

Oliver Twist

countenance of his future master, with a mingled expression of horror and fear, too palpable to be mistaken, even by a half-blind magistrate.

The old gentleman stopped, laid down his pen, and looked from Oliver to Mr. Limbkins ; who attempted to take snuff with a cheerful and unconcerned aspect.

“ My boy ! ” said the old gentleman, leaning over the desk. Oliver started at the sound. He might be excused for doing so : for the words were kindly said ; and strange sounds frighten one. He trembled violently, and burst into tears.

“ My boy ! ” said the old gentleman, “ you look pale and alarmed. What is the matter ? ”

“ Stand a little away from him, Beadle,” said the other magistrate : laying aside the paper, and leaning forward with an expression of interest. “ Now, boy, tell us what’s the matter : don’t be afraid.”

Oliver fell on his knees, and clasping his hands together, prayed that they would order him back to the dark room—that they would starve him—beat him—kill him if they pleased—rather than send him away with that dreadful man.

“ Well ! ” said Mr. Bumble, raising his hands and eyes with most impressive solemnity. “ Well ! of all the artful and designing orphans that ever I see, Oliver, you are one of the most bare-facedest.”

“ Hold your tongue, Beadle,” said the second old gentleman, when Mr. Bumble had given vent to this compound adjective.

“ I beg your worship’s pardon,” said Mr. Bumble, incredulous of his having heard aright. “ Did your worship speak to me ? ”

“ Yes. Hold your tongue.”

Mr. Bumble was stupefied with astonishment. A beadle ordered to hold his tongue ! A moral revolution !

The old gentleman in the tortoise-shell spectacles looked at his companion ; he nodded significantly.

“ We refuse to sanction these indentures,” said the old gentleman : tossing aside the piece of parchment as he spoke.

“ I hope,” stammered Mr. Limbkins : “ I hope the magistrates will not form the opinion that the authorities

Oliver Twist

have been guilty of any improper conduct, on the unsupported testimony of a mere child."

"The magistrates are not called upon to pronounce any opinion on the matter," said the second old gentleman sharply. "Take the boy back to the workhouse, and treat him kindly. He seems to want it."

The next morning, the public were once more informed that Oliver Twist was again To Let, and that five pounds would be paid to anybody who would take possession of him.

CHAPTER III

IN great families, when an advantageous place cannot be obtained for the young man who is growing up, it is a very general custom to send him to sea. The board, in imitation of so wise and salutary an example, took counsel together on the expediency of shipping off Oliver Twist, in some small trading vessel bound to a good unhealthy port. This suggested itself as the very best thing that could possibly be done with him: the probability being, that the skipper would flog him to death, in a playful mood, some day after dinner, or would knock his brains out with an iron bar; both pastimes being, as is pretty generally known, very favourite and common recreations among gentlemen of that class.

Mr. Bumble had been despatched to make various preliminary inquiries, with the view of finding out some captain or other who wanted a cabin-boy without any friends; and was returning to the workhouse to communicate the result of his mission; when he encountered at the gate, no less a person than Mr. Sowerberry, the parochial undertaker.

Mr. Sowerberry was a tall, gaunt, large-jointed man, attired in a suit of threadbare black, with darned cotton stockings of the same colour, and shoes to answer. His features were not naturally intended to wear a smiling aspect, but he was in general rather given to professional jocosity. His step was elastic, and his face betokened

Oliver Twist

inward pleasantry, as he advanced to Mr. Bumble, and shook him cordially by the hand.

"I have taken the measure of the two women that died last night, Mr. Bumble," said the undertaker.

"You'll make your fortune, Mr. Sowerberry," said the beadle, as he thrust his thumb and forefinger into the proffered snuff-box of the undertaker: which was an ingenious little model of a patent coffin. "I say you'll make your fortune, Mr. Sowerberry," repeated Mr. Bumble, tapping the undertaker on the shoulder, in a friendly manner, with his cane.

"Think so?" said the undertaker in a tone which half admitted and half disputed the probability of the event. "The prices allowed by the board are very small, Mr. Bumble."

"So are the coffins," replied the beadle: with precisely as near an approach to a laugh as a great official ought to indulge in.

Mr. Sowerberry was much tickled at this: as of course he ought to be; and laughed a long time without cessation. "Well, well, Mr. Bumble," he said at length, "there's no denying that, since the new system of feeding has come in, the coffins are something narrower and more shallow than they used to be; but we must have some profit, Mr. Bumble. Well-seasoned timber is an expensive article, sir; and all the iron handles come, by canal, from Birmingham."

"Well, well," said Mr. Bumble, "every trade has its drawbacks. A fair profit is, of course, allowable."

"Of course, of course," replied the undertaker; "and if I don't get a profit upon this or that particular article, why, I make it up in the long-run, you see—he! he! he!"

"Just so," said Mr. Bumble. "By the bye, you don't know anybody who wants a boy, do you? A porochial 'prentis, who is at present a deadweight; a millstone, as I may say; round the porochial throat? Liberal terms, Mr. Sowerberry, liberal terms!" As Mr. Bumble spoke, he raised his cane to the bill above him, and gave three distinct raps upon the words "five pounds": which were printed thereon in Roman capitals of gigantic size.

"Gadso!" said the undertaker: taking Mr. Bumble

Oliver Twist

by the gilt-edged lappel of his official coat ; " that's just the very thing I wanted to speak to you about. You know, Mr. Bumble, I pay a good deal towards the poor's rates."

" Hem ! " said Mr. Bumble. " Well ? "

" Well, " replied the undertaker, " I was thinking that if I pay so much towards 'em, I've a right to get as much out of 'em as I can, Mr. Bumble ; and so—and so—I think I'll take the boy myself."

Mr. Bumble grasped the undertaker by the arm, and led him into the building. Mr. Sowerberry was closeted with the board for five minutes ; and it was arranged that Oliver should go to him that evening " upon liking " —a phrase which means, in the case of a parish apprentice, that if the master find, upon a short trial, that he can get enough work out of a boy without putting too much food into him, he shall have him for a term of years, to do what he likes with.

When little Oliver was taken before " the gentlemen " that evening ; and informed that he was to go, that night, as general house-lad to a coffin-maker's ; and that if he complained of his situation, or ever came back to the parish again, he would be sent to sea, there to be drowned, or knocked on the head, as the case might be, he evinced so little emotion, that they by common consent pronounced him a hardened young rascal, and ordered Mr. Bumble to remove him forthwith.

Oliver heard the news of his destination, in perfect silence ; and, having had his luggage put into his hand--which was not very difficult to carry, inasmuch as it was all comprised within the limits of a brown paper parcel, about half a foot square by three inches deep—he pulled his cap over his eyes ; and once more attaching himself to Mr. Bumble's coat cuff, was led away by that dignitary to a new scene of suffering.

The undertaker, who had just put up the shutters of his shop, was making some entries in his day-book by the light of a most appropriate dismal candle, when Mr. Bumble entered.

" Aha ! " said the undertaker : looking up from the book, and pausing in the middle of a word ; " is that you, Bumble ? "

Oliver Twist

"No one else, Mr. Sowerberry," replied the beadle. "Here! I've brought the boy." Oliver made a bow.

"Oh! that's the boy, is it?" said the undertaker: raising the candle above his head, to get a better view of Oliver. "Mrs. Sowerberry, will you have the goodness to come here a moment, my dear?"

Mrs. Sowerberry emerged from a little room behind the shop, and presented the form of a short, thin, squeezed-up woman, with a vixenish countenance.

"My dear," said Mr. Sowerberry, deferentially, "this is the boy from the workhouse that I told you of." Oliver bowed again.

"Dear me!" said the undertaker's wife, "he's very small."

"Why, he *is* rather small," replied Mr. Bumble: looking at Oliver as if it were his fault that he was no bigger; "he *is* small. There's no denying it. But he'll grow, Mrs. Sowerberry—he'll grow."

"Ah! I dare say he will," replied the lady pettishly, "on our victuals and our drink. I see no saving in parish children, not I; for they always cost more to keep than they're worth. However, men always think they know best. There! Get downstairs, little bag o' bones." With this, the undertaker's wife opened a side door, and pushed Oliver down a steep flight of stairs into a stone cell, damp and dark: forming the ante-room to the coal-cellar, and denominated "kitchen": wherein sat a slatternly girl, in shoes down at heel, and blue worsted stockings very much out of repair.

"Here, Charlotte," said Mrs. Sowerberry, who had followed Oliver down, "give this boy some of the cold bits that were put by for Trip. He hasn't come home since the morning, so he may go without 'em. I dare say the boy isn't too dainty to eat 'em—are you, boy?"

Oliver, whose eyes had glistened at the mention of meat, and who was trembling with eagerness to devour it, replied in the negative; and a plateful of coarse broken victuals was set before him.

I wish some well-fed philosopher, whose meat and drink turn to gall within him; whose blood is ice, whose heart is iron; could have seen Oliver Twist clutching

Oliver Twist

at the dainty viands that the dog had neglected. I wish he could have witnessed the horrible avidity with which Oliver tore the bits asunder with all the ferocity of famine. There is only one thing I should like better ; and that would be to see the philosopher making the same sort of meal himself, with the same relish.

" Well," said the undertaker's wife, when Oliver had finished his supper : which she had regarded in silent horror, and with fearful anguries of his future appetite : " have you done ? "

There being nothing eatable within his reach, Oliver replied in the affirmative.

" Then come with me," said Mrs. Sowerberry : taking up a dim and dirty lamp, and leading the way upstairs ; " your bed's under the counter. You don't mind sleeping among the coffins, I suppose ? But it doesn't much matter whether you do or don't, for you can't sleep anywhere else. Come ; don't keep me here all night ! "

Oliver lingered no longer, but meekly followed his new mistress.

CHAPTER IV

OLIVER, being left to himself in the undertaker's shop, set the lamp down on a workman's bench, and gazed timidly about him with a feeling of awe and dread, which many people a good deal older than he will be at no loss to understand. An unfinished coffin on black tressels, which stood in the middle of the shop, looked so gloomy and death-like that a cold tremble came over him, every time his eyes wandered in the direction of the dismal object. Against the wall were ranged, in regular array, a long row of elm boards cut into the same shape : looking in the dim light, like high-shouldered ghosts with their hands in their breeches-pockets. Coffin-plates, elm-chips, bright-headed nails, and shreds of black cloth, lay scattered on the floor ; and the wall behind the counter was ornamented with a lively representation of two mutes in very stiff neckcloths, on duty at a large private door, with a hearse drawn by four black steeds, approaching

Oliver Twist

in the distance. The shop was close and hot. The atmosphere seemed tainted with the smell of coffins. The recess beneath the counter in which his flock mattress was thrust, looked like a grave.

Nor were these the only dismal feelings which depressed Oliver. He was alone in a strange place ; and we all know how chilled and desolate the best of us will sometimes feel in such a situation. The boy had no friends to care for, or to care for him. The regret of no recent separation was fresh in his mind ; the absence of no loved and well-remembered face sank heavily into his heart. But his heart *was* heavy, notwithstanding ; and he wished, as he crept into his narrow bed, that that were his coffin, and that he could be laid in a calm and lasting sleep in the churchyard ground, with the tall grass waving gently above his head, and the sound of the old deep bell to soothe him in his sleep.

Oliver was awakened in the morning, by a loud kicking at the outside of the shop-door ; which, before he could huddle on his clothes, was repeated, in an angry and impetuous manner, about twenty-five times. When he began to undo the chain, the legs desisted, and a voice began.

“Open the door, will yer ?” cried the voice which belonged to the legs which had kicked at the door.

“I will, directly, sir,” replied Oliver : undoing the chain, and turning the key.

“I suppose yer the new boy, ain’t yer ?” said the voice through the key-hole.

“Yes, sir,” replied Oliver.

“How old are yer ?” inquired the voice.

“Ten, sir,” replied Oliver.

“Then I’ll whop yer when I get in,” said the voice ; “you just see if I don’t, that’s all, my work’us brat !” and having made this obliging promise, the voice began to whistle.

Oliver drew back the bolts with a trembling hand, and opened the door.

For a second or two, he glanced up the street, and down the street, and over the way : impressed with the belief that the unknown, who had addressed him through the key-hole, had walked a few paces off, to warm himself ;

Oliver Twist

for nobody did he see but a big charity-boy, sitting on a post in front of the house, eating a slice of bread and butter: which he cut into wedges, the size of his mouth, with a clasp knife, and then consumed with great dexterity.

"I beg your pardon, sir," said Oliver at length: seeing that no other visitor made his appearance; "did you knock?"

"I kicked," replied the charity-boy.

"Did you want a collin, sir?" inquired Oliver, innocently.

At this the charity-boy looked monstrous fierce; and said that Oliver would want one before long, if he cut jokes with his superiors in that way.

"Yer don't know who I am, I suppose, Work'us?" said the charity-boy, in continuation: descending from the top of the post, meanwhile, with edifying gravity.

"No, sir," rejoined Oliver.

"I'm Mister Noah Claypole," said the charity-boy, "and you're under me. Take down the shutters, yer idle young ruffian!" With this, Mr. Claypole administered a kick to Oliver, and entered the shop with a dignified air, which did him great credit.

Oliver, having taken down the shutters, and broken a pane of glass in his efforts to stagger away beneath the weight of the first one to a small court at the side of the house in which they were kept during the day, was graciously assisted by Noah: who having consoled him with the assurance that "he'd catch it," condescended to help him. Mr. Sowerberry came down soon after. Shortly afterwards Mrs. Sowerberry appeared. Oliver having "caught it," in fulfilment of Noah's prediction, followed that young gentleman down the stairs to breakfast.

"Come near the fire, Noah," said Charlotte. "I saved a nice little bit of bacon for you from master's breakfast. Oliver, shut that door at Mister Noah's back, and take them bits that I've put out on the cover of the bread-pan. There's your tea; take it away to that box, and drink it there, and make haste, for they'll want you to mind the shop. D'y'e hear?"

"D'y'e hear, Work'us?" said Noah Claypole.

Oliver Twist

"Lor, Noah!" said Charlotte, "what a rum creature you are! Why don't you let the boy alone?"

"Let him alone!" said Noah. "Why everybody lets him alone enough, for the matter of that. Neither his father nor his mother will ever interfere with him. All his relations let him have his own way pretty well. Eh, Charlotte? He! he! he!"

"Oh, you queer soul!" said Charlotte, bursting into a hearty laugh, in which she was joined by Noah; after which they both looked scornfully at poor Oliver Twist, as he sat shivering on the box in the coldest corner of the room, and ate the stale pieces which had been specially reserved for him.

Noah was a charity-boy, but not a workhouse orphan, his mother being a washerwoman, and his father a drunken soldier, discharged with a wooden leg, and a diurnal pension of twopence-halfpenny and an unstateable fraction. The shop-boys in the neighbourhood had long been in the habit of branding Noah, in the public streets, with the ignominious epithets of "leathers," "charity," and the like; and Noah had borne them without reply. But, now that fortune has cast in his way a nameless orphan, at whom even the meanest could point the finger of scorn, he retorted on him with interest.

Oliver had been sojourning at the undertaker's some three weeks or a month. Mr. and Mrs. Sowerberry—the shop being shut up—were taking their supper in the little back-parlour, when Mr. Sowerberry said,

"My dear—"

"Well," said Mrs. Sowerberry, sharply.

"It's about young Twist, my dear," said Mr. Sowerberry. "A very good-looking boy, that, my dear."

"He need be, for he eats enough," observed the lady.

"There's an expression of melancholy in his face, my dear," resumed Mr. Sowerberry, "which is very interesting. He would make a delightful mute, my love."

Mrs. Sowerberry looked up with an expression of considerable wonderment. Mr. Sowerberry remarked it; and, without allowing time for any observation on the good lady's part, proceeded.

"I don't mean a regular mute to attend grown-up

Oliver Twist

people, my dear, but only for children's practice. It would be very new to have a mute in proportion, my dear. You may depend upon it, it would have a superb effect."

Mrs. Sowerberry, who had a good deal of taste in the undertaking way, was much struck by the novelty of this idea; it was speedily determined, therefore, that Oliver should be at once initiated into the mysteries of the trade; and, with this view, that he should accompany his master on the very next occasion of his services being required.

The month's trial over, Oliver was formally apprenticed. It was a nice sickly season just at this time. In commercial phrase, coffins were looking up; and, in the course of a few weeks, Oliver acquired a great deal of experience. The success of Mr. Sowerberry's ingenious speculation, exceeded even his most sanguine hopes. The oldest inhabitants recollect no period at which measles had been so prevalent, or so fatal to infant existence; and many were the mournful processions which little Oliver headed, in a hat-band reaching down to his knees, to the indescribable admiration and emotion of all the mothers in the town.

For many months Oliver continued meekly to submit to the domination and ill-treatment of Noah Claypole: who used him far worse than before, now that his jealousy was roused by seeing the new boy promoted to the black stick and hat-band, while he, the old one, remained stationary in the muslin-cap and leathers. Charlotte treated him ill, because Noah did; and Mrs. Sowerberry was his decided enemy, because Mr. Sowerberry was disposed to be his friend; so, between these three on one side, and a glut of funerals on the other, Oliver was not altogether as comfortable as the hungry pig was, when he was shut up, by mistake, in the grain department of a brewery.

One day, Oliver and Noah had descended into the kitchen at the usual dinner-hour, to banquet upon a small joint of mutton—a pound and a half of the worst end of the neck—when Charlotte being called out of the way, there ensued a brief interval of time, which Noah Claypole, being hungry and vicious, considered he could

Oliver Twist

not possibly devote to a worthier purpose than aggravating and tantalising young Oliver Twist.

Intent upon this innocent amusement, Noah put his feet on the table-cloth ; and pulled Oliver's hair ; and twitched his ears ; and expressed his opinion that he was a "sneak" ; and furthermore announced his intention of coming to see him hanged, whenever that desirable event should take place. But, none of these taunts producing the desired effect of making Oliver cry, Noah attempted to be more facetious still ; and in this attempt, did what many small wits, with far greater reputations than Noah, sometimes do to this day, when they want to be funny. He got rather personal.

"Work'us," said Noah, "how's your mother?"

"She's dead," replied Oliver ; "don't you say anything about her to me!"

Oliver's colour rose as he said this ; he breathed quickly ; and there was a curious working of the mouth and nostrils, which Mr. Claypole thought must be the immediate precursor of a violent fit of crying. Under this impression he returned to the charge.

"What did she die of, Work'us?" said Noah.

"Of a broken heart, some of our old nurses told me," replied Oliver : more as if he were talking to himself, than answering Noah. "I think I know what it must be to die of that!"

"Tol de rol lol lol, right fol lairy, Work'us," said Noah, as a tear rolled down Oliver's cheek. "What's set you a-snivelling now?"

"Not *you*," replied Oliver, hastily brushing the tear away. "Don't think it."

"Oh, not me, eh!" sneered Noah.

"No, not *you*," replied Oliver, sharply. "There ; that's enough. Don't say anything more to me about her ; you'd better not!"

"Better not!" exclaimed Noah. "Well ! Better not ! Work'us, don't be impudent. *Your* mother, too ! She was a nice 'un, she was. Oh, Lor!" And here, Noah nodded his head expressively ; and curled up as much of his small red nose as muscular action could collect together, for the occasion.

"Yer know, Work'us," continued Noah, emboldened



NOAH PUT HIS FEET ON THE TABLE-CLOTH ; AND PULLED
OLIVER'S HAIR ; AND TWITCHED HIS EARS.

Oliver Twist

by Oliver's silence, and speaking in a jeering tone of affected pity: of all tones the most annoying: "Yer know, Work'us, it can't be helped now; and of course yer couldn't help it then; and I'm very sorry for it; and I'm sure we all are, and pity yer very much. But yee must know, Work'us, yer mother was a regular right-down bad 'un."

"What did you say?" inquired Oliver, looking up very quickly.

"A regular right-down bad 'un, Work'us," replied Noah, coolly. "And it's a great deal better, Work'us, that she died when she did, or else she'd have been hard labouring in Bridewell, or transported, or hung; which is more likely than either, isn't it?"

Crimson with fury, Oliver started up; overthrew the chair and table; seized Noah by the throat; shook him, in the violence of his rage, till his teeth chattered in his head; and, collecting his whole force into one heavy blow, felled him to the ground.

A minute ago, the boy had looked the quiet, mild, dejected creature that harsh treatment had made him. But his spirit was roused at last; the cruel insult to his dead mother had set his blood on fire. His breast heaved; his attitude was erect; his eye bright and vivid; his whole person changed, as he stood glaring over the cowardly tormentor who now lay crouching at his feet; and defied him with an energy he had never known before.

"He'll murder me!" blubbered Noah. "Charlotte! missis! Here's the new boy a-murdering of me! Help! help! Oliver's gone mad! Char-lotte!"

Noah's shouts were responded to, by a loud scream from Charlotte, and a louder from Mrs. Sowerberry; the former of whom rushed into the kitchen by a side-door, while the latter paused on the staircase till she was quite certain that it was consistent with the preservation of human life, to come further down.

"Oh, you little wretch!" screamed Charlotte: seizing Oliver with her utmost force, which was about equal to that of a moderately strong man in particularly good training, "Oh, you little un-grate-ful, mur-de-rous, hor-rid villain!" And between every syllable, Charlotte gave

Oliver Twist

Oliver a blow with all her might : accompanying it with a scream, for the benefit of society.

Charlotte's fist was by no means a light one ; but, lest it should not be effectual in calming Oliver's wrath, Mrs. Sowerberry plunged into the kitchen, and assisted to hold him with one hand, while she scratched his face with the other. In this favourable position of affairs, Noah rose from the ground, and pommelled him behind.

This was rather too violent exercise to last long. When they were all wearied out, and could tear and beat no longer, they dragged Oliver, struggling and shouting, but nothing daunted, into the dust-cellar, and there locked him up. This being done, Mrs. Sowerberry sunk into a chair, and burst into tears.

"Bless her, she's going off ! " said Charlotte. "A glass of water, Noah, dear. Make haste ! "

"Oh ! Charlotte," said Mrs. Sowerberry : speaking as well as she could, through a deficiency of breath, and a sufficiency of cold water, which Noah had poured over her head and shoulders. "Oh ! Charlotte, what a mercy we have not all been murdered in our beds ! "

"Ah ! mercy indeed, ma'am," was the reply. "Poor Noah ! He was all but killed, ma'am, when I come in."

"Poor fellow ! " said Mrs. Sowerberry : looking pitifully on the charity-boy.

Noah, whose top waistcoat-button might have been somewhere on a level with the crown of Oliver's head, rubbed his eyes with the inside of his wrists while this commiseration was bestowed upon him, and performed some affecting tears and sniffs.

"What's to be done ? " exclaimed Mrs. Sowerberry. "Your master's not at home ; there's not a man in the house, and he'll kick that door down in ten minutes." Oliver's vigorous plunges against the bit of timber in question, rendered this occurrence highly probable.

"Dear, dear ! I don't know, ma'am," said Charlotte, "unless we send for the police-officers."

"Or the millingtary," suggested Mr. Claypole.

"No, no," said Mrs. Sowerberry : bethinking herself of Oliver's old friend. "Run to Mr. Bumble, Noah, and tell him to come here directly, and not to lose a minute ; never mind your cap ! Make haste ! You

Oliver Twist

can hold a knife to that black eye, as you run along. It'll keep the swelling down."

Noah stopped to make no reply, but started off at his fullest speed ; and very much it astonished the people who were out walking, to see a charity-boy tearing through the streets pell-mell, with no cap on his head, and a clasp-knife at his eye.

CHAPTER V

NOAH CLAYPOLE ran along the streets at his swiftest pace, and paused not once for breath, until he reached the workhouse-gate. Having rested here, for a minute or so, to collect a good burst of sobs and an imposing show of tears and terror, he knocked loudly at the wicket ; and presented such a rueful face to the aged pauper who opened it, that even he, who saw nothing but rueful faces about him at the best of times, started back in astonishment.

" Why, what's the matter with the boy ! " said the old pauper.

" Mr. Bumble ! Mr. Bumble ! " cried Noah, with well-affected dismay : and in tones so loud and agitated, that they not only caught the ear of Mr. Bumble himself, who happened to be hard by, but alarmed him so much that he rushed into the yard without his cocked-hat.

" Oh, Mr. Bumble, sir ! " said Noah : " Oliver, sir,— Oliver has——"

" What ? What ? " interposed Mr. Bumble : with a gleam of pleasure in his metallic eyes. " Not run away ; he hasn't run away, has he, Noah ? "

" No, sir, no. Not run away, sir, but he's turned wicious," replied Noah. " He tried to murder me, sir ; and then he tried to murder Charlotte ; and then missis. Oh ! what dreadful pain it is ! Such agony, please, sir ! " And here, Noah writhed and twisted his body into an extensive variety of eel-like positions ; thereby giving Mr. Bumble to understand that, from the violent and sanguinary onset of Oliver Twist, he had sustained

Oliver Twist

severe internal injury and damage, from which he was at that moment suffering the acutest torture.

When Noah saw that the intelligence he communicated perfectly paralysed Mr. Bumble, he imparted additional effect thereunto, by bewailing his dreadful wounds ten times louder than before ; and when he observed a gentleman in a white waistcoat crossing the yard, he was more tragic in his lamentations than ever.

The gentleman's notice was very soon attracted ; for he had not walked three paces, when he turned angrily round, and inquired what that young cur was howling for, and why Mr. Bumble did not favour him with something which would render the series of vocular exclamations so designated, an involuntary process ?

" It's a poor boy from the free-school, sir," replied Mr. Bumble, " who has been nearly murdered—all but murdered, sir,—by young Twist."

" By Jove ! " exclaimed the gentleman in the white waistcoat, stopping short. " I knew it ! I felt a strange presentiment from the very first, that that audacious young savage would come to be hung ! "

" He has likewise attempted, sir, to murder the female servant," said Mr. Bumble, with a face of ashy paleness.

" And his missis," interposed Mr. Claypole.

" And his master, too, I think you said, Noah ? " added Mr. Bumble.

" No ! he's out, or he would have murdered him," replied Noah. " He said he wanted to."

" Ah ! said he wanted to, did he, my boy ? " inquired the gentleman in the white waistcoat.

" Yes, sir," replied Noah. " And please, sir, missis wants to know whether Mr. Bumble can spare time to step up there, directly, and flog him—'cause master's out."

" Certainly, my boy ; certainly," said the gentleman in the white waistcoat : smiling benignly, and patting Noah's head, which was about three inches higher than his own. " Bumble, just step up to Sowerberry's with your cane, and see what's best to be done. Don't spare him, Bumble."

" No, I will not, sir," replied the beadle. And the cocked-hat and cane having been, by this time, adjusted to their owner's satisfaction, Mr. Bumble and Noah

Oliver 'Twist

Claypole betook them selves with all speed to the undertaker's shop.

Here the position of affairs had not at all improved. Sowerberry had not yet returned, and Oliver continued to kick, with undiminished vigour, at the cellar-door. The accounts of his ferocity, as related by Mrs. Sowerberry and Charlotte, were of so startling a nature, that Mr. Bumble judged it prudent to parley, before opening the door. With this view he gave a kick at the outside, by way of prelude; and, then, applying his mouth to the keyhole, said, in a deep and impressive tone :

“ Oliver ! ”

“ Come ; you let me out ! ” replied Oliver, from the inside.

“ Do you know this here voice, Oliver ? ” said Mr. Bumble.

“ Yes, ” replied Oliver.

“ Ain’t you afraid of it, sir ? Ain’t you a-trembling while I speak, sir ? ” said Mr. Bumble.

“ No ! ” replied Oliver, boldly.

An answer so different from the one he had expected to elicit, and was in the habit of receiving, staggered Mr. Bumble not a little. He stepped back from the keyhole ; drew himself up to his full height ; and looked from one to another of the three bystanders, in mute astonishment.

“ Oh, you know, Mr. Bumble, he must be mad, ” said Mrs. Sowerberry. “ No boy in half his senses could venture to speak so to you. ”

“ It’s not Madness, ma’am, ” replied Mr. Bumble, after a few moments of deep meditation. “ It’s Meat. ”

“ What ? ” exclaimed Mrs. Sowerberry.

“ Meat, ma’am, meat, ” replied Bumble, with stern emphasis. “ You’ve over-fed him, ma’am. If you had kept the boy on gruel, ma’am, this would never have happened. ”

“ Dear, dear ! ” ejaculated Mrs. Sowerberry, piously raising her eyes to the kitchen ceiling : “ this comes of being liberal ! ”

“ Ah ! ” said Mr. Bumble, when the lady brought her eyes down to earth again ; “ the only thing that can be done now, that I know of, is to leave him in the cellar

Oliver Twist

for a day or so, till he's a little starved down ; and then to take him out, and keep him on gruel all through his apprenticeship."

At this point of Mr. Bumble's discourse, Oliver recommenced kicking, with a violence that rendered every other sound inaudible. Sowerberry returned at this juncture. Oliver's offence having been explained to him, with such exaggerations as the ladies thought best calculated to rouse his ire, he unlocked the cellar-door in a twinkling, and dragged his rebellious apprentice out, by the collar.

Oliver's clothes had been torn in the beating he had received ; his face was bruised and scratched ; and his hair scattered over his forehead. The angry flush had not disappeared, however, and when he was pulled out of his prison, he scowled boldly on Noah, and looked quite undismayed.

"Now, you are a nice young fellow, ain't you ?" said Sowerberry ; giving Oliver a shake, and a box on the ear.

"He called my mother names," replied Oliver.

"Well, and what if he did, you little ungrateful wretch ?" said Mrs. Sowerberry. "She deserved what he said, and worse."

"She didn't," said Oliver.

"She did," said Mrs. Sowerberry.

"It's a lie !" said Oliver.

Mrs. Sowerberry burst into a flood of tears.

This flood of tears left Mr. Sowerberry no alternative. To do him justice, he was kindly disposed towards the boy ; perhaps, because it was his interest to be so ; perhaps, because his wife disliked him. The flood of tears, however, left him no resource ; so he at once gave him a drubbing, which satisfied even Mrs. Sowerberry herself, and rendered Mr. Bumble's subsequent application of the parochial cane, rather unnecessary. For the rest of the day, he was shut up in the back kitchen, in company with a pump and a slice of bread, and, at night, Mrs. Sowerberry, after making various remarks outside the door, by no means complimentary to the memory of his mother, looked into the room, and, amidst the jeers and pointings of Noah and Charlotte, ordered him upstairs to his dismal bed.

sideration in the sequel. This, then, is the appropriate region of human liberty. It comprises, first, the inward domain of consciousness ; demanding liberty of conscience, in the most comprehensive sense ; liberty of thought and feeling ; absolute freedom of opinion and sentiment on all subjects, practical or speculative, scientific, moral, or theological. The liberty of expressing and publishing opinions may seem to fall under a different principle, since it belongs to that part of the conduct of an individual which concerns other people ; but, being almost of as much importance as the liberty of thought itself, and resting in great part on the same reasons, is practically inseparable from it. Secondly, the principle requires liberty of tastes and pursuits ; of framing the plan of our life to suit our own character ; of doing as we like, subject to such consequences as may follow : without impediment from our fellow creatures, so long as what we do does not harm them, even though they should think our conduct foolish, perverse, or wrong. Thirdly, from this liberty of each individual, follows the liberty, within the same limits, of combination among individuals ; freedom to unite, for any purpose not involving harm to others : the persons combining being supposed to be of full age, and not forced or deceived.

No society in which these liberties are not, on the whole, respected, is free, whatever may be its form of government ; and none is completely free in which they do not exist absolute and unqualified. The only freedom which deserves the name, is that of pursuing our own good in our own way, so long as we do not attempt to deprive others of theirs, or impede their efforts to obtain it. Each is the proper guardian of his own health, whether bodily, or mental and spiritual. Mankind are greater gainers by suffering each other to live as seems good to themselves, than by compelling each to live as seems good to the rest.

Though this doctrine is anything but new, and, to some persons, may have the air of a truism, there is

Oliver Twist

CHAPTER VI

OLIVER reached the stile at which the by-path terminated ; and once more gained the high-road. It was eight o'clock now. Though he was nearly five miles away from the town, he ran, and hid behind the hedges, by turns, till noon : fearing that he might be pursued and overtaken. Then he sat down to rest by the side of the milestone, and began to think, for the first time, where he had better go and try to live.

The stone by which he was seated, bore, in large characters, an intimation that it was just seventy miles from that spot to London. The name awakened a new train of ideas in the boy's mind. London!—that great large place!—nobody—not even Mr. Bumble—could ever find him there! He had often heard the old men in the workhouse, too, say that no lad of spirit need want in London ; and that there were ways of living in that vast city, which those who had been bred up in country parts had no idea of. It was the very place for a homeless boy, who must die in the streets unless some one helped him. As these things passed through his thoughts, he jumped upon his feet, and again walked forward.

He had diminished the distance between himself and London by full four miles more, before he recollect ed how much he must undergo ere he could hope to reach his place of destination. As this consideration forced itself upon him, he slackened his pace a little, and meditated upon his means of getting there. He had a crust of bread, a coarse shirt, and two pairs of stockings, in his bundle. He had a penny too—a gift of Sowerberry's after some funeral in which he had acquitted himself more than ordinarily well—in his pocket. “A clean shirt,” thought Oliver, “is a very comfortable thing ; and so are two pairs of darned stockings ; and so is a penny ; but they are small helps to a sixty-five miles' walk in winter time.” But Oliver's thoughts, like those of most other people, although they were extremely ready and active to point out his difficulties, were wholly at a loss to suggest any feasible mode of surmounting

Oliver Twist

them ; so, after a good deal of thinking to no particular purpose, he changed his little bundle over to the other shoulder, and trudged on.

Oliver walked twenty miles that day ; and all that time tasted nothing but the crust of dry bread, and a few draughts of water, which he begged at the cottage doors by the roadside. When the night came, he turned into a meadow ; and, creeping close under a hay-rick, determined to lie there, till morning. He felt frightened at first, for the wind moaned dismally over the empty fields : and he was cold and hungry, and more alone than he had ever felt before. Being very tired with his walk, however, he soon fell asleep and forgot his troubles.

He felt cold and stiff, when he got up next morning, and so hungry that he was obliged to exchange the penny for a small loaf, in the very first village through which he passed. He had walked no more than twelve miles, when night closed in again. His feet were sore, and his legs so weak that they trembled beneath him. Another night passed in the bleak damp air, made him worse ; when he set forward on his journey next morning, he could hardly crawl along.

In some villages, large painted boards were fixed up : warning all persons who begged within the district, that they would be sent to jail. This frightened Oliver very much, and made him glad to get out of those villages with all possible expedition. In others, he would stand about the inn-yards, and look mournfully at every one who passed : a proceeding which generally terminated in the landlady's ordering one of the post-boys who were lounging about, to drive that strange boy out of the place, for she was sure he had come to steal something. If he begged at a farmer's house, ten to one but they threatened to set the dog on him ; and when he showed his nose in a shop, they talked about the beadle—which brought Oliver's heart into his mouth,—very often the only thing he had there, for many hours together.

In fact, if it had not been for a good-hearted turnpike-man, and a benevolent old lady, Oliver would most assuredly have fallen dead upon the king's highway. But the turnpike-man gave him a meal of bread and cheese ; and the old lady, who had a shipwrecked grandson

Oliver Twist

wandering barefoot in some distant part of the earth, took pity upon the poor orphan, and gave him what little she could afford—and more—with such kind and gentle words, and such tears of sympathy and compassion, that they sank deeper into Oliver's soul, than all the sufferings he had ever undergone.

Early on the seventh morning after he had left his native place, Oliver limped slowly into the little town of Barnet. The window-shutters were closed ; the street was empty ; not a soul had awakened to the business of the day. The sun was rising in all its splendid beauty ; but the light only served to show the boy his own lonesomeness and desolation, as he sat, with bleeding feet and covered with dust, upon a door-step.

He had been crouching on the step for some time, gazing listlessly at the coaches as they passed through, and thinking how strange it seemed that they could do, with ease, in a few hours, what it had taken him a whole week of courage and determination beyond his years to accomplish : when he was roused by observing that a boy, who had passed him carelessly some minutes before, had returned, and was now surveying him most earnestly from the opposite side of the way. He took little heed of this at first ; but the boy remained in the same attitude of close observation so long, that Oliver raised his head, and returned his steady look. Upon this, the boy crossed over ; and, walking close up to Oliver, said,

“ Hullo, my covey ! What's the row ? ”

The boy who addressed this inquiry to the young wayfarer, was about his own age : but one of the queerest-looking boys that Oliver had ever seen. He was a snub-nosed, flat-browed, common-faced boy enough ; and as dirty a juvenile as one would wish to see ; but he had about him all the airs and manners of a man. He was short of his age : with rather bow-legs, and little, sharp, ugly eyes. His hat was stuck on the top of his head so lightly, that it threatened to fall off every moment—and would have done so, very often, if the wearer had not had a knack of every now and then giving his head a sudden twitch, which brought it back to its old place again. He wore a man's coat, which reached nearly to his

Oliver Twist

heels. He had turned the cuffs back, half-way up his arm, to get his hands out of the sleeves : apparently with the ultimate view of thrusting them into the pockets of his corduroy trousers ; for there he kept them. He was, altogether, as roystering and swaggering a young gentleman as ever stood four feet six, or something less, in his bluchers.

“ Hullo, my covey ! What’s the row ? ” said this strange young gentleman to Oliver.

“ I am very hungry and tired,” replied Oliver : the tears standing in his eyes as he spoke. “ I have walked a long way. I have been walking these seven days.”

“ Walking for sivin days ! ” said the young gentleman. “ Oh, I see. Beak’s order, eh ? But,” he added, noticing Oliver’s look of surprise, “ I suppose you don’t know what a beak is, my flash com-pan-i-on.”

Oliver mildly replied, that he had always heard a bird’s mouth described by the term in question.

“ My eyes, how green ! ” exclaimed the young gentleman. “ Why, a beak’s a madgst’rate ; and when you walk by a beak’s order, it’s not straight forerd, but always a-going up, and nivir a-coming down agin. Was you never on the mill ? ”

“ What mill ? ” inquired Oliver.

“ What mill ! Why, *the* mill—the mill as takes up so little room that it’ll work inside a Stone Jug ; and always goes better when the wind’s low with people, than when it’s high ; acos then they can’t get workmen. But come,” said the young gentleman ; “ you want grub, and you shall have it. I’m at low-water-mark myself—only one bob and a magpie ; but, as far as it goes, I’ll fork out and stump. Up with you on your pins. There ! Now then ! Morrice ! ”

Assisting Oliver to rise, the young gentleman took him to an adjacent chandler’s shop, where he purchased a sufficiency of ready-dressed ham and a half-quartern loaf, or, as he himself expressed it, “ a fourpenny bran ! ” the ham being kept clean and preserved from dust, by the ingenious expedient of making a hole in the loaf by pulling out a portion of the crumb, and stuffing it therein. Taking the bread under his arm, the young gentleman turned into a small public-house, and led

Oliver Twist

the way to a tap-room in the rear of the premises. Here, a pot of beer was brought in, by direction of the mysterious youth ; and Oliver, falling to, at his new friend's bidding, made a long and hearty meal, during the progress of which, the strange boy eyed him from time to time with great attention.

“ Going to London ? ” said the strange boy, when Oliver had at length concluded.

“ Yes.”

“ Got any lodgings ? ”

“ No.”

“ Money ? ”

“ No.”

The strange boy whistled ; and put his arms into his pockets, as far as the big coat sleeves would let them go.

“ Do you live in London ? ” inquired Oliver.

“ Yes. I do, when I'm at home,” replied the boy. “ I suppose you want some place to sleep in to-night, don't you ? ”

“ I do, indeed,” answered Oliver. “ I have not slept under a roof since I left the country.”

“ Don't fret your eyelids on that score,” said the young gentleman. “ I've got to be in London to-night ; and I know a 'spectable old gentleman as lives there, wot'll give you lodgings for nothink, and never ask for the change—that is, if any gentleman he knows introduces you. And don't he know me ? Oh, no ! Not in the least ! By no means. Certainly not ! ”

The young gentleman smiled, as if to intimate that the later fragments of discourse were playfully ironical ; and finished the beer as he did so.

This unexpected offer of shelter was too tempting to be resisted ; especially as it was immediately followed up, by the assurance that the old gentleman referred to, would doubtless provide Oliver with a comfortable place, without loss of time. This led to a more friendly and confidential dialogue ; from which Oliver discovered that his friend's name was Jack Dawkins, and that he was a peculiar pet and *protégé* of the elderly gentleman before mentioned.

Mr. Dawkins's appearance did not say a vast deal in favour of the comforts which his patron's interest obtained

Oliver Twist

for those whom he took under his protection ; but, as he had a rather flighty and dissolute mode of conversing, and furthermore avowed that among his intimate friends he was better known by the *sobriquet* of "The Artful Dodger," Oliver concluded that, being of a dissipated and careless turn, the moral precepts of his benefactor had hitherto been thrown away upon him.

As John Dawkins objected to their entering London before nightfall, it was nearly eleven o'clock when they reached the turnpike at Islington. They crossed from the Angel into St. John's Road ; struck down the small street which terminates at Sadler's Wells Theatre ; through Exmouth Street and Coppice Row ; down the little court by the side of the workhouse ; across the classic ground which once bore the name of Hockley-in-the-Hole ; thence into Little Saffron Hill ; and so into Saffron Hill the Great : along which the Dodger scurried at a rapid pace, directing Oliver to follow close at his heels.

Although Oliver had enough to occupy his attention in keeping sight of his leader, he could not help bestowing a few hasty glances on either side of the way, as he passed along. A dirtier or more wretched place he had never seen. The street was very narrow and muddy, and the air was impregnated with filthy odours. There were a good many small shops ; but the only stock in trade appeared to be heaps of children, who, even at that time of night, were crawling in and out at the doors, or screaming from the inside. Covered ways and yards, which here and there diverged from the main street, disclosed little knots of houses, where drunken men and women were positively wallowing in filth ; and from several of the door-ways, great ill-looking fellows were cautiously emerging, bound, to all appearance, on no very well-disposed or harmless errands.

Oliver was just considering whether he hadn't better run away, when they reached the bottom of the hill. His conductor, catching him by the arm, pushed open the door of a house near Field Lane ; and, drawing him into the passage, closed it behind them.

"Now, then ! " cried a voice from below, in reply to a whistle from the Dodger.

"Plummy and slam ! " was the reply.

Oliver Twist

This seemed to be some watchword or signal that all was right ; for the light of a feeble candle gleamed on the wall at the remote end of the passage ; and a man's face peeped out, from where a balustrade of the old kitchen staircase had been broken away.

"There's two on you," said the man, thrusting the candle farther out, and shading his eyes with his hand. "Who's the t'other one ?"

"A new pal," replied Jack Dawkins, pulling Oliver forward.

"Where did he come from ?"

"Greenland. Is Fagin upstairs ?"

"Yes, he's a-sortin' the wipes. Up with you !" The candle was drawn back, and the face disappeared.

Oliver, groping his way with one hand, and having the other firmly grasped by his companion, ascended with much difficulty the dark and broken stairs : which his conductor mounted with an ease and expedition that showed he was well acquainted with them. He threw open the door of a back-room, and drew Oliver in after him.

The walls and ceiling of the room were perfectly black with age and dirt. There was a deal table before the fire : upon which were a candle, stuck in a ginger-beer bottle, two or three pewter pots, a loaf and butter, and a plate. In a frying-pan, which was on the fire, and which was secured to the mantelshelf by a string, some sausages were cooking ; and standing over them, with a toasting-fork in his hand, was a very old shrivelled Jew, whose villainous-looking and repulsive face was obscured by a quantity of matted red hair. He was dressed in a greasy flannel gown, with his throat bare ; and seemed to be dividing his attention between the frying-pan and a clothes-horse, over which a great number of silk handkerchiefs were hanging. Several rough beds made of old sacks were huddled side by side on the floor. Seated round the table were four or five boys, none older than the Dodger, smoking long clay pipes, and drinking spirits with the air of middle-aged men. These all crowded about their associate as he whispered a few words to the Jew ; and then turned round and grinned at Oliver. So did the Jew himself, ~~toasting-fork in hand.~~

Oliver Twist

"This is him, Fagin," said Jack Dawkins ; "my friend Oliver Twist."

The Jew grinned ; and, making a low obeisance to Oliver, took him by the hand, and hoped he should have the honour of his intimate acquaintance. Upon this, the young gentlemen with the pipes came round him, and shook both his hands very hard—especially the one in which he held his little bundle. One young gentleman was very anxious to hang up his cap for him ; and another was so obliging as to put his hands in his pockets, in order that, as he was very tired, he might not have the trouble of emptying them, himself, when he went to bed. These civilities would probably have been extended much farther, but for a liberal exercise of the Jew's toasting-fork on the heads and shoulders of the affectionate youths who offered them.

"We are very glad to see you, Oliver, very," said the Jew. "Dodger, take off the sausages ; and draw a tub near the fire for Oliver. Ah, you're a-staring at the pocket-handkerchiefs ! eh, my dear ! There are a good many of 'em, ain't there ? We've just looked 'em out, ready for the wash ; that's all, Oliver ; that's all. Ha ! ha ! ha !"

The latter part of this speech was hailed by a boisterous shout from all the hopeful pupils of the merry old gentleman. In the midst of which, they went to supper.

Oliver ate his share, and the Jew then mixed him a glass of hot gin and water : telling him he must drink it off directly, because another gentleman wanted the tumbler. Oliver did as he was desired. Immediately afterwards he felt himself gently lifted on to one of the sacks ; and then he sunk into a deep sleep.

CHAPTER VII

IT was late next morning when Oliver awoke, from a sound, long sleep. There was no other person in the room but the old Jew, who was boiling some coffee in a saucepan for breakfast, and whistling softly to himself

Oliver Twist

as he stirred it round and round, with an iron spoon. He would stop every now and then to listen when there was the least noise below: and when he had satisfied himself, he would go on, whistling and stirring again, as before.

Oliver asked if he might get up.

“Certainly, my dear, certainly,” replied the old gentleman. “There’s a pitcher of water in the corner by the door. Bring it here; and I’ll give you a basin to wash in, my dear.”

Oliver had scarcely washed himself, and made everything tidy, by emptying the basin out of the window, agreeably to the Jew’s directions, when the Dodger returned: accompanied by a very sprightly young friend, whom Oliver had seen smoking on the previous night, and who was now formally introduced to him as Charley Bates. The four sat down to breakfast on the coffee, and some hot rolls and ham which the Dodger had brought home in the crown of his hat.

“Well,” said the Jew, glancing slyly at Oliver, and addressing himself to the Dodger, “I hope you’ve been at work this morning, my dears?”

“Hard,” replied the Dodger.

“As Nails,” added Charley Bates.

“Good boys, good boys!” said the Jew. “What have you got, Dodger?”

“A couple of pocket-books,” replied that young gentleman.

“Lined?” inquired the Jew, with eagerness.

“Pretty well,” replied the Dodger, producing two pocket-books; one green, and the other red.

“Not so heavy as they might be,” said the Jew, after looking at the insides carefully; “but very neat and nicely made. Ingenious workman, ain’t he, Oliver?”

“Very, indeed, sir,” said Oliver. At which Mr. Charles Bates laughed uproariously.

“And what have you got, my dear?” said Fagin to Charley Bates.

“Wipes,” replied Master Bates; at the same time producing four pocket-handkerchiefs.

“Well,” said the Jew, inspecting them closely; “they’re very good ones, very. You haven’t marked

Oliver Twist

them well, though, Charley ; so the marks shall be picked out with a needle, and we'll teach Oliver how to do it. Shall us, Oliver, eh ? Ha ! ha ! ha ! ”

“ If you please, sir,” said Oliver.

“ You'd like to be able to make pocket-handkerchiefs as easy as Charley Bates, wouldn't you, my dear ? ” said the Jew.

“ Very much, indeed, if you'll teach me, sir,” replied Oliver.

Master Bates saw something so exquisitely ludicrous in this reply, that he burst into another laugh ; which laugh, meeting the coffee he was drinking, and carrying it down some wrong channel, very nearly terminated in his premature suffocation.

“ He is so jolly green ! ” said Charley when he recovered, as an apology to the company for his unpolite behaviour.

When the breakfast was cleared away, the merry old gentleman and the two boys played at a very curious and uncommon game, which was performed in this way. The merry old gentleman, placing a snuff-box in one pocket of his trousers, a note-case in the other, and a watch in his waistcoat pocket, with a guard-chain round his neck, and sticking a mock diamond pin in his shirt : buttoned his coat tight round him, and putting his spectacle-case and handkerchief in his pockets, trotted up and down the room with a stick, in imitation of the manner in which old gentlemen walk about the streets any hour in the day. Sometimes he stopped at the fire-place, and sometimes at the door, making believe that he was staring with all his might into shop windows. At such times, he would look constantly round him, for fear of thieves, and would keep slapping all his pockets in turn, to see that he hadn't lost anything, in such a very funny and natural manner, that Oliver laughed till the tears ran down his face. All this time, the two boys followed him closely about : getting out of his sight, so nimbly, every time he turned round, that it was impossible to follow their motions. At last, the Dodger trod upon his toes, or ran upon his boot accidentally, while Charley Bates stumbled up against him behind ; and in that one moment they took from him,

Oliver Twist

with the most extraordinary rapidity, snuff-box, note-case, watch-guard, chain, shirt-pin, pocket-handkerchief, even the spectacle-case. If the old gentleman felt a hand in any one of his pockets, he cried out where it was ; and then the game began all over again.

When this game had been played a great many times, a couple of young ladies called to see the young gentlemen ; one of whom was named Bet, and the other Nancy. They wore a good deal of hair, not very neatly turned up behind, and were rather untidy about the shoes and stockings. They were not exactly pretty, perhaps ; but they had a great deal of colour in their faces, and looked quite stout and hearty. Being remarkably free and agreeable in their manners, Oliver thought them very nice girls indeed. As there is no doubt they were.

At length, Charley Bates expressed his opinion that it was time to pad the hoof. This, it occurred to Oliver, must be French for going out ; for, directly afterwards, the Dodger, and Charley, and the two young ladies, went away together, having been kindly furnished by the amiable old Jew with money to spend.

"There, my dear," said Fagin. "That's a pleasant life, isn't it ? They have gone out for the day."

"Have they done work, sir ?" inquired Oliver.

"Yes," said the Jew ; "that is, unless they should unexpectedly come across any, when they are out ; and they won't neglect it, if they do, my dear, depend upon it. Make 'em your models, my dear. Is my handkerchief hanging out of my pocket, my dear ?" said the Jew, stopping short.

"Yes, sir," said Oliver.

"See if you can take it out, without my feeling it : as you saw them do, when we were at play this morning."

Oliver held up the bottom of the pocket with one hand, as he had seen the Dodger hold it, and drew the handkerchief lightly out of it with the other.

"Is it gone ?" cried the Jew.

"Here it is, sir," said Oliver, showing it in his hand.

"You're a clever boy, my dear," said the playful old gentleman, patting Oliver on the head approvingly. "I never saw a sharper lad. Here's a shilling for you.

Oliver Twist

If you go on, in this way, you'll be the greatest man of the time. And now come here, and I'll show you how to take the marks out of the handkerchiefs."

Oliver wondered what picking the old gentleman's pocket in play, had to do with his chances of being a great man. But, thinking that the Jew, being so much his senior, must know best, he followed him quietly to the table, and was soon deeply involved in his new study.

CHAPTER VIII

FOR many days, Oliver remained in the Jew's room, picking the marks out of the pocket-handkerchiefs (of which a great number were brought home), and sometimes taking part in the game already described : which the two boys and the Jew played, regularly, every morning. At length, he began to languish for fresh air, and took many occasions of earnestly entreating the old gentleman to allow him to go out to work, with his two companions.

One morning, Oliver obtained the permission he had so eagerly sought. There had been no handkerchiefs to work upon, for two or three days, and the dinners had been rather meagre. Perhaps these were reasons for the old gentleman's giving his assent ; but, whether they were or no, he told Oliver he might go, and placed him under the joint guardianship of Charley Bates and his friend the Dodger.

The three boys sallied out ; the Dodger with his coat-sleeves tucked up, and his hat cocked, as usual ; Master Bates sauntering along with his hands in his pockets ; and Oliver between them, wondering where they were going, and what branch of manufacture he would be instructed in, first.

They were just emerging from a narrow court not far from the open square in Clerkenwell, which is yet called, by some strange perversion of terms, "The Green" : when the Dodger made a sudden stop ; and,

Oliver Twist

laying his finger on his lip, drew his companions back again, with the greatest caution and circumspection.

“What’s the matter?” demanded Oliver.

“Hush!” replied the Dodger. “Do you see that old cove at the book-stall?”

“The old gentleman over the way?” said Oliver.
“Yes, I see him.”

“He’ll do,” said the Dodger.

“A prime plant,” observed Master Charley Bates.

Oliver looked from one to the other, with the greatest surprise; but he was not permitted to make any inquiries; for the two boys walked stealthily across the road, and slunk close behind the old gentleman towards whom his attention had been directed. Oliver walked a few paces after them; and, not knowing whether to advance or retire, stood looking on in silent amazement.

The old gentleman was a very respectable-looking personage, with a powdered head and gold spectacles. He was dressed in a bottle-green coat with a black velvet collar; wore white trousers; and carried a smart bamboo cane under his arm. He had taken up a book from the stall, and there he stood, reading away, as hard as if he were in his elbow-chair, in his own study.

What was Oliver’s horror and alarm as he stood a few paces off, looking on with his eyelids as wide open as they would possibly go, to see the Dodger plunge his hand into the old gentleman’s pocket, and draw from thence a handkerchief! To see him hand the same to Charley Bates; and finally to behold them, both, running away round the corner at full speed!

In an instant the whole mystery of the handkerchiefs rushed upon the boy’s mind. He stood, for a moment, with the blood so tingling through all his veins from terror, that he felt as if he were in a burning fire; then, confused, and frightened, he took to his heels; and, not knowing what he did, made off as fast as he could lay his feet to the ground.

This was all done in a minute’s space. In the very instant when Oliver began to run, the old gentleman, putting his hand to his pocket, and missing his handkerchief, turned sharp round. Seeing the boy scudding away at such a rapid pace, he very naturally concluded him to

Oliver Twist

be the depredator ; and, shouting “ Stop thief ! ” with all his might, made off after him, book in hand.

But the old gentleman was not the only person who raised the hue-and-cry. The Dodger and Master Bates, unwilling to attract public attention by running down the open street, had merely retired into the very first doorway round the corner. They no sooner heard the cry, and saw Oliver running, than, guessing exactly how the matter stood, they issued forth with great promptitude ; and, shouting “ Stop thief ! ” too, joined in the pursuit like good citizens.

“ Stop thief ! Stop thief ! ” There is a magic in the sound. The tradesman leaves his counter, and the carman his waggon ; the butcher throws down his tray ; the baker his basket ; the milkman his pail ; the errand-boy his parcels ; the school-boy his marbles ; the pavilion his pickaxe ; the child his battledore. Away they run, pell-mell, helter-skelter, slap-dash : tearing, yelling, screaming, knocking down the passengers as they turn the corners, rousing up the dogs, and astonishing the fowls : and streets, squares, and courts, re-echo with the sound.

“ Stop thief ! Stop thief ! ” There is a passion *for hunting something* deeply implanted in the human breast. One wretched breathless child, panting with exhaustion ; terror in his looks ; agony in his eyes ; large drops of perspiration streaming down his face ; strains every nerve to make head upon his pursuers ; and as they follow on his track, and gain upon him every instant, they hail his decreasing strength with still louder shouts, and whoop and scream with joy. “ Stop thief ! ”

Stopped at last ! A clever blow. He is down upon the pavement, and the crowd eagerly gather round him : each new-comer jostling and struggling with the others to catch a glimpse. “ Stand aside ! ” “ Give him a little air ! ” “ Nonsense ! he don’t deserve it.” “ Where’s the gentleman ? ” “ Here he is, coming down the street.” “ Make room there for the gentleman ! ” “ Is this the boy, sir ? ” “ Yes.”

Oliver lay, covered with mud and dust, and bleeding from the mouth, looking wildly round upon the heap of faces that surrounded him, when the old gentleman was

Oliver Twist

officially dragged and pushed into the circle by the foremost o' the pursuers.

"Yes," said the gentleman, "I am afraid it is the boy."

"Afraid!" murinured the crowd. "That's a good 'un!"

"Poor fellow!" said the gentleman, "he has hurt himself."

"I did that, sir," said a great lubberly fellow, stepping forward; "and preciously I cut my knuckle agin' his mouth. I stopped him, sir."

The fellow touched his hat with a grin, expecting something for his pains; but, the old gentleman, eying him with an expression of dislike, looked anxiously round, as if he contemplated running away himself: which it is very possible he might have attempted to do, and thus have afforded another chase, had not a police officer (who is generally the last person to arrive in such cases) at that moment made his way through the crowd, and seized Oliver by the collar.

"Come, get up," said the man, roughly.

"It wasn't me indeed, sir. Indeed, indeed, it was two other boys," said Oliver, clasping his hands passionately, and looking round. "They are here somewhere."

"Oh no, they ain't," said the officer. He meant this to be ironical, but it was true besides; for the Dodger and Charley Bates had filed off down the first convenient court they came to. "Come, get up!"

"Don't hurt him," said the old gentleman, compassionately.

"Oh no, I won't hurt him," replied the officer, tearing his jacket half off his back, in proof thereof. "Come, I know you; it won't do. Will you stand upon your legs?"

Oliver, who could hardly stand, made a shift to raise himself on his feet, and was at once lugged along the streets by the jacket-collar, at a rapid pace. The gentleman walked on with them by the officer's side; and as many of the crowd as could achieve the feat, got a little ahead, and stared back at Oliver from time to time. The boys shouted in triumph; and on they went.

Oliver Twist

CHAPTER IX

THE offence had been committed within the district, and indeed in the immediate neighbourhood of, a very notorious metropolitan police office. The crowd had only the satisfaction of accompanying Oliver through two or three streets, and down a place called Mutton Hill, when he was led beneath a low archway, and up a dirty court, into this dispensary of summary justice, by the backway. It was a small paved yard into which they turned, and here they encountered a stout man with a bunch of whiskers on his face, and a bunch of keys in his hand.

"What's the matter now?" said the man carelessly.

"A young fogle-hunter," replied the man who had Oliver in charge.

"Are you the party that's been robbed, sir?" inquired the man with the keys.

"Yes, I am," replied the old gentleman; "but I am not sure that this boy actually took the handkerchief. I—I would rather not press the case."

"Must go before the magistrate now, sir," replied the man. "His worship will be disengaged in half a minute. Now, young gallows!"

This was an invitation for Oliver to enter through a door which he unlocked as he spoke, and which led into a stone cell. Here he was searched; and nothing being found upon him, locked up.

The old gentleman looked almost as rueful as Oliver when the key grated in the lock. He turned with a sigh to the book, which had been the innocent cause of all this disturbance.

"There is something in that boy's face," said the old gentleman to himself as he walked slowly away, tapping his chin with the cover of the book, in a thoughtful manner; "something that touches and interests me. *Can* he be innocent? He looked like—By the bye," exclaimed the old gentleman, halting very abruptly, and staring up into the sky. "Bless my soul! Where have I seen something like that look before?"

Oliver Twist

But the old gentleman could recall no one countenance of which Oliver's features bore a trace. So, he heaved a sigh over the recollections he had awakened ; and being, happily for himself, an absent old gentleman, buried them again in the pages of the musty book.

He was roused by a touch on the shoulder, and a request from the man with the keys to follow him into the office. He closed his book hastily ; and was at once ushered into the imposing presence of the renowned Mr. Fang.

The office was a front parlour, with a panelled wall. Mr. Fang sat behind a bar, at the upper end ; and on one side the door was a sort of wooden pen in which poor little Oliver was already deposited : trembling very much at the awfulness of the scene.

Mr. Fang was a lean, long-backed, stiff-necked, middle-sized man, with no great quantity of hair, and what he had, growing on the back and sides of his head. His face was stern, and much flushed.

The old gentleman bowed respectfully ; and advancing to the magistrate's desk, said, suiting the action to the word, "That is my name and address, sir." He then withdrew a pace or two ; and, with another polite and gentlemanly inclination of the head, waited to be questioned.

"Who are you ?" said Mr. Fang.

The old gentleman pointed, with some surprise, to his card.

"Officer !" said Mr. Fang, tossing the card contemptuously away with the newspaper. "Who is this fellow ?"

"My name, sir," said the old gentleman, speaking like a gentleman, "my name, sir, is Brownlow. Permit me to inquire the name of the magistrate who offers a gratuitous and unprovoked insult to a respectable person, under the protection of the bench."

"Officer !" said Mr. Fang, throwing the paper on one side, "what's this fellow charged with ?"

"He's not charged at all, your worship," replied the officer. "He appears against the boy, your worship."

His worship knew this perfectly well ; but it was a good annoyance and a safe one.

Oliver Twist

"Appears against the boy, does he?" said Fang, surveying Mr. Brownlow contemptuously from head to foot. "Swear him!"

"Before I am sworn, I must beg to say one word," said Mr. Brownlow: "and that is, that I really never, without actual experience, could have believed—"

"Hold your tongue, sir!" said Mr. Fang, peremptorily.

"I will not, sir!" replied the old gentleman.

"Hold your tongue this instant, or I'll have you turned out of the office!" said Mr. Fang. "You're an insolent, impudent fellow. How dare you bully a magistrate!"

"What!" exclaimed the old gentleman, reddening.

"Swear this person!" said Fang to the clerk. "I'll not hear another word. Swear him."

Mr. Brownlow's indignation was greatly roused; but reflecting, perhaps, that he might only injure the boy by giving vent to it, he suppressed his feelings and submitted to be sworn at once.

"Now," said Fang, "what's the charge against this boy? What have you got to say, sir?"

"I was standing at a book-stall—" Mr. Brownlow began.

"Hold your tongue, sir," said Mr. Fang. "Policeman! Where's the policeman? Hear, swear this policeman. Now, policeman, what is this?"

The policeman, with becoming humility, related how he had taken the charge; how he had searched Oliver, and found nothing on his person; and how that was all he knew about it.

"Are there any witnesses?" inquired Mr. Fang.

"None, your worship," replied the policeman.

Mr. Fang sat silent for some minutes, and then, turning round to the prosecutor, said in a towering passion,

"Do you mean to state what your complaint against this boy is, man, or do you not? You have been sworn. Now, if you stand there, refusing to give evidence, I'll punish you for disrespect to the bench."

With many interruptions and repeated insults, Mr. Brownlow contrived to state his case; observing that, in the surprise of the moment, he had run after the boy because he saw him running away; and expressing

Oliver Twist

his hope that, if the magistrate should believe him, although not actually the thief, to be connected with thieves, he would deal as leniently with him as justice would allow.

“ He has been hurt already,” said the old gentleman in conclusion. “ And I fear,” he added, with great energy, looking towards the bar, “ I really fear that he is ill.”

“ Oh ! yes, I dare say ! ” said Mr. Fang, with a sneer. “ Come, none of your tricks here, you young vagabond ; they won’t do. What’s your name ? ”

Oliver tried to reply, but his tongue failed him. He was deadly pale ; and the whole place seemed turning round and round.

“ What’s your name, you hardened scoundrel ? ” demanded Mr. Fang. “ Officer, what’s his name ? ”

This was addressed to a bluff old fellow, in a striped waistcoat, who was standing by the bar. He bent over Oliver, and repeated the inquiry ; but finding him really incapable of understanding the question ; and knowing that his not replying would only infuriate the magistrate the more, and add to the severity of his sentence ; he hazarded a guess.

“ He says his name’s Tom White, your worship,” said this kind-hearted thief-taker.

“ Oh, he won’t speak out, won’t he ? ” said Fang. “ Very well, very well. Where does he live ? ”

“ Where he can, your worship,” replied the officer ; again pretending to receive Oliver’s answer.

“ Has he any parents ? ” inquired Mr. Fang.

“ He says they died in his infancy, your worship,” replied the officer : hazarding the usual reply.

At this point of the inquiry, Oliver raised his head ; and, looking round with imploring eyes, murmured a feeble prayer for a draught of water.

“ Stuff and nonsense ! ” said Mr. Fang : “ don’t try to make a fool of me.”

“ I think he really is ill, your worship,” remonstrated the officer.

“ I know better,” said Mr. Fang.

“ Take care of him, officer,” said the old gentleman, raising his hands instinctively ; “ he’ll fall down.”

Oliver Twist

"Stand away, officer," cried Fang; "let him, if he likes."

Oliver availed himself of the kind permission, and fell to the floor in a fainting fit. The men in the office looked at each other, but no one dared to stir.

"I knew he was shamming," said Fang, as if this were incontestable proof of the fact. "Let him lie there; he'll soon be tired of that."

"How do you propose to deal with the case, sir?" inquired the clerk in a low voice.

"Summarily," replied Mr. Fang. "He stands committed for three months—hard labour of course. Clear the office."

The door was opened for this purpose, and a couple of men were preparing to carry the insensible boy to his cell; when an elderly man of decent but poor appearance, clad in an old suit of black, rushed hastily into the office, and advanced towards the bench.

"Stop, stop! Don't take him away! For Heaven's sake stop a moment!" cried the new-comer, breathless with haste.

"What is this? Who is this? Turn this man out. Clear the office!" cried Mr. Fang.

"I will speak," cried the man; "I will not be turned out. I saw it all. I keep the book-stall. I demand to be sworn. I will not be put down. Mr. Fang, you must hear me. You must not refuse, sir."

The man was right. His manner was determined; and the matter was growing rather too serious to be hushed up.

"Swear the man," growled Mr. Fang, with a very ill grace. "Now, man, what have you got to say?"

"This," said the man: "I saw three boys: two others and the prisoner here: loitering on the opposite side of the way, when this gentleman was reading. The robbery was committed by another boy. I saw it done; and I saw that this boy was perfectly amazed and stupefied by it."

"Why didn't you come here before?" said Fang, after a pause.

"I hadn't a soul to mind the shop," replied the man. "Everybody who could have helped me, had joined in the

Oliver Twist

pursuit. I could get nobody till five minutes ago ; and I've run here all the way."

"The prosecutor was reading, was he ?" inquired Fang, after another pause.

"Yes," replied the man. "The very book he has in his hand."

"Oh, that book, eh ?" said Fang. "Is it paid for ?"

"No, it is not," replied the man, with a smile.

"Dear me, I forgot all about it !" exclaimed the absent old gentleman, innocently.

"A nice person to prefer a charge against a poor boy!" said Fang, with a comical effort to look humane. "I consider, sir, that you have obtained possession of that book, under very suspicious and disreputable circumstances ; and you may think yourself very fortunate that the owner of the property declines to prosecute. Let this be a lesson to you, my man, or the law will overtake you yet. The boy is discharged. Clear the office."

The mandate was obeyed ; and the indignant Mr. Brownlow was conveyed out, with the book in one hand, and the bamboo cane in the other : in a perfect frenzy of rage and defiance. He reached the yard ; and his passion vanished in a moment. Little Oliver Twist lay on his back on the pavement, with his shirt unbuttoned, and his temples bathed with water ; his face a deadly white ; and a cold tremble convulsing his whole frame.

"Poor boy, poor boy !" said Mr. Brownlow, bending over him. "Call a coach, somebody, pray. Directly !"

A coach was obtained, and Oliver, having been carefully laid on one seat, the old gentleman got in and sat himself on the other.

"May I accompany you ?" said the book-stall keeper, looking in.

"Bless me, yes, my dear sir," said Mr. Brownlow quickly. "I forgot you. Dear, dear ! I have this unhappy book still ! Jump in. Poor fellow ! There's no time to lose."

The book-stall keeper got into the coach ; and away they drove.

CHAPTER X

THE coach rattled away, over nearly the same ground as that which Oliver had traversed when he first entered London in company with the Dodger ; and, turning a different way when it reached the Angel at Islington, stopped at length before a neat house, in a quiet shady street near Pentonville. Here, a bed was prepared, without loss of time, in which Mr. Brownlow saw his young charge carefully and comfortably deposited ; and here he was tended with a kindness and solicitude that knew no bounds.

But, for many days, Oliver remained insensible to all the goodness of his new friends. The sun rose and sank, and rose and sank again, and many times after that ; and still the boy lay stretched on his uneasy bed, dwindling away beneath the dry and wasting heat of fever.

Weak, and thin, and pallid, he awoke at last from what seemed to have been a long and troubled dream. Feebly raising himself in the bed, with his head resting on his trembling arm, he looked anxiously around.

"What room is this ? Where have I been brought to ?" said Oliver. "This is not the place I went to sleep in."

He uttered these words in a feeble voice, being very faint and weak ; but they were overheard at once. The curtain at the bed's head was hastily drawn back, and a motherly old lady, very neatly and precisely dressed, rose as she undrew it, from an arm-chair close by, in which she had been sitting at needlework.

"Hush, my dear," said the old lady softly. "You must be very quiet, or you will be ill again ; and you have been very bad,—as bad as bad could be, pretty nigh. Lie down again ; there's a dear !" With those words, the old lady very gently placed Oliver's head upon the pillow.

So, Oliver kept very still. He soon fell into a gentle doze, from which he was awakened by the light of a candle : which, being brought near the bed, showed him a gentleman with a very large and loud-ticking gold

Oliver Twist

watch in his hand, who felt his pulse, and said he was a great deal better.

Oliver dozed off again, soon after this ; when he awoke, it was nearly twelve o'clock. The old lady tenderly bade him good-night shortly afterwards, and left him in charge of a fat old woman who had just come : bringing with her, in a little bundle, a small Prayer Book and a large nightcap. Putting the latter on her head and the former on the table, the old woman, after telling Oliver that she had come to sit up with him, drew her chair close to the fire and went off into a series of short naps, chequered at frequent intervals with sundry tumblings forward, and divers moans and chokings.

And thus the night crept slowly on. Oliver lay awake for some time, counting the little circles of light which the reflection of the rushlight-shade threw upon the ceiling ; or tracing with his languid eyes the intricate pattern of the paper on the wall. Gradually, he fell into that deep tranquil sleep which ease from recent suffering alone imparts ; that calm and peaceful rest which it is pain to wake from.

It had been bright day, for hours, when Oliver opened his eyes ; he felt cheerful and happy. The crisis of the disease was safely past. He belonged to the world again.

In three days' time he was able to sit in an easy-chair, well propped up with pillows ; and, as he was still too weak to walk, Mrs. Bedwin had him carried downstairs into the little housekeeper's room, which belonged to her. Having him set, here, by the fireside, the good old lady sat herself down too ; and, being in a state of considerable delight at seeing him so much better, forthwith began to cry most violently.

“Never mind me, my dear,” said the old lady. “I'm only having a regular good cry. There ; it's all over now ; and I'm quite comfortable.”

“You're very, very kind to me, ma'am,” said Oliver.

“Well, never you mind that, my dear,” said the old lady ; “that's got nothing to do with your broth ; and it's full time you had it ; for the doctor says Mr. Brownlow may come in to see you this morning ; and we must get up our best looks, because the better we look, the more he'll be pleased.” And with this, the old lady applied

Oliver Twist

herself to warming up, in a little saucepan, a basin full of broth: strong enough, Oliver thought, to furnish an ample dinner, when reduced to the regulation strength, for three hundred and fifty paupers, at the lowest computation.

"Are you fond of pictures, dear?" inquired the old lady, seeing that Oliver had fixed his eyes, most intently, on a portrait which hung against the wall; just opposite his chair.

"I don't quite know, ma'am," said Oliver, without taking his eyes from the canvas; "I have seen so few that I hardly know. What a beautiful, mild face that lady's is!"

"Ah!" said the old lady, "painters always make ladies out prettier than they are, or they wouldn't get any custom, child. The man that invented the machine for taking likenesses might have known *that* would never succeed; it's a deal too honest. A deal," said the old lady, laughing very heartily at her own acuteness.

"Is—is that a likeness, ma'am?" said Oliver.

"Yes," said the old lady, looking up for a moment from the broth; "that's a portrait."

"Whose, ma'am?" asked Oliver.

"Why, really, my dear, I don't know," answered the old lady in a good-humoured manner. "It's not a likeness of anybody that you or I know, I expect. It seems to strike your fancy, dear."

"It is so very pretty," replied Oliver.

"Why, sure you're not afraid of it?" said the old lady: observing, in great surprise, the look of awe with which the child regarded the painting.

"Oh no, no," returned Oliver quickly; "but the eyes look so sorrowful; and where I sit, they seem fixed upon me. It makes my heart beat," added Oliver in a low voice, "as if it was alive, and wanted to speak to me, but couldn't."

"Lord save us!" exclaimed the old lady, starting; "don't talk in that way, child. You're weak and nervous after your illness. Let me wheel your chair round to the other side; and then you won't see it. There!" said the old lady, suiting the action to the word "you don't see it now, at all events."

Oliver Twist

Oliver *did* see it in his mind's eye as distinctly as if he had not altered his position ; but he thought it better not to worry the kind old lady ; so he smiled gently when she looked at him ; and Mrs. Bedwin, satisfied that he felt more comfortable, salted and broke bits of toasted bread into the broth, with all the bustle befitting so solemn a preparation. Oliver got through it with extraordinary expedition. He had scarcely swallowed the last spoonful, when there came a soft rap at the door. "Come in," said the old lady ; and in walked Mr. Brownlow.

Now, the old gentleman came in as brisk as need be ; but, he had no sooner raised his spectacles on his forehead, and thrust his hands behind the skirts of his dressing-gown to take a good long look at Oliver, than his countenance underwent a very great variety of odd contortions. Oliver looked very worn and shadowy from sickness, and made an ineffectual attempt to stand up, out of respect to his benefactor, which terminated in his sinking back into the chair again.

"Poor boy, poor boy ! " said Mr. Brownlow, clearing his throat. "I'm rather hoarse this morning, Mrs. Bedwin. I'm afraid I have caught cold."

"I hope not, sir," said Mrs. Bedwin. "Everything you have had, has been well aired, sir."

"I don't know, Bedwin. I don't know," said Mr. Brownlow ; "I rather think I had a damp napkin at dinner-time yesterday ; but never mind that. How do you feel, my dear ? "

"Very happy, sir," replied Oliver. "And very grateful indeed, sir, for your goodness to me."

"Good boy," said Mr. Brownlow, stoutly. "Have you given him any nourishment, Bedwin ? Any slops, eh ? "

"He has just had a basin of beautiful strong broth, sir," replied Mrs. Bedwin.

"Ugh ! " said Mr. Brownlow, with a slight shudder ; "a couple of glasses of port wine would have done him a great deal more good. Wouldn't they, Tom White, eh ? "

"My name is Oliver, sir," replied the little invalid : with a look of great astonishment.

"Oliver," said Mr. Brownlow ; "Oliver what ? Oliver White, eh ? "

Oliver Twist

“ No, sir, Twist, Oliver Twist.”

“ Queer name ! ” said the old gentleman. “ What made you tell the magistrate your name was White ? ”

“ I never told him so, sir,” returned Oliver in amazement.

This sounded so like a falsehood, that the old gentleman looked somewhat sternly in Oliver’s face. It was impossible to doubt him ; there was truth in every one of its thin and sharpened lineaments.

“ Some mistake,” said Mr. Brownlow.

“ I hope you are not angry with me, sir ? ” said Oliver, raising his eyes beseechingly.

“ No, no,” replied the old gentleman. “ Why ! what’s this ? Bedwin, look there ! ”

As he spoke, he pointed hastily to the picture above Oliver’s head, and then to the boy’s face. There was its living copy. The eyes, the head, the mouth ; every feature was the same. The expression was, for the instant, so precisely alike, that the minutest line seemed copied with startling accuracy !

Oliver knew not the cause of this sudden exclamation ; for, not being strong enough to bear the start it gave him, he fainted away. A weakness on his part, which affords the narrative an opportunity of relieving the reader from suspense, in behalf of the two young pupils of the Merry Old Gentleman ; and of recording—

That when the Dodger, and his accomplished friend Master Bates, joined in the hue-and-cry which was raised at Oliver’s heels, in consequence of their executing an illegal conveyance of Mr. Brownlow’s personal property, as has been already described, they were actuated by a very laudable and becoming regard for themselves ; the freedom of the subject and the liberty of the individual being among the first and proudest boasts of a true-hearted Englishman.

It was not until the two boys had scoured, with great rapidity, through a most intricate maze of narrow streets and courts, that they ventured to halt beneath a low and dark archway. Having remained silent here, just long enough to recover breath to speak, Master Bates uttered an exclamation of amusement and delight ; and, bursting into an uncontrollable fit of laughter, flung

Oliver Twist

himself upon a door-step, and rolled thereon in a transport of mirth.

“ What’s the matter ? ” inquired the Dodger.

“ Ha ! ha ! ha ! ” roared Charley Bates.

“ Hold your noise,” remonstrated the Dodger, looking cautiously round. “ Do you want to be grabbed, stupid ? ”

“ I can’t help it,” said Charley, “ I can’t help it ! To see him splitting away at that pace, and cutting round the corners, and knocking up against the posts, and starting on again as if he was made of iron as well as them, and me with the wife in my pocket, singing out arter him—oh, my eye ! ”

“ What’ll Fagin say ? ” inquired the Dodger.

“ Why, what should he say ? ” inquired Charley : stopping rather suddenly in his merriment ; for the Dodger’s manner was impressive. “ What should he say ? ”

Mr. Dawkins whistled for a couple of minutes ; then, taking off his hat, scratched his head, and nodded thrice.

“ What do you mean ? ” said Charley.

“ Toor rul lol loo, gammon and spinnage, the frog he wouldn’t, and high cockolorum,” said the Dodger : with a slight sneer on his intellectual countenance.

This was explanatory, but not satisfactory. Master Bates felt it so ; and again said, “ What do you mean ? ”

The Dodger made no reply ; but putting his hat on again, and gathering the skirts of his long-tailed coat under his arm, thrust his tongue into his cheek, slapped the bridge of his nose some half-dozen times in a familiar but expressive manner, and turning on his heel, slunk down the court. Master Bates followed, with a thoughtful countenance.

The noise of footsteps on the creaking stairs, a few minutes after the occurrence of this conversation, roused the merry old gentleman as he sat over the fire with a saveloy and a small loaf in his left hand ; a pocket-knife in his right ; and a pewter pot on the trivet. There was a rascally smile on his white face as he turned round, and, looking sharply out from under his thick red eyebrows, bent his ear towards the door, and listened.

“ Why, how’s this ? ” muttered the Jew : changing

Oliver Twist

countenance ; “ only two of ‘em ? Where’s the third ? They can’t have got into trouble. Hark ! ”

The footsteps approached nearer ; they reached the landing. The door was slowly opened ; and the Dodger and Charley Bates entered, closing it behind them.

CHAPTER XI

“ WHERE’S Oliver ? ” said the Jew, rising with a menacing look. “ Where’s the boy ? ”

The young thieves eyed their preceptor as if they were alarmed at his violence ; and looked uneasily at each other. But they made no reply.

“ What’s become of the boy ? ” said the Jew, seizing the Dodger tightly by the collar, and threatening him with horrid imprecations. “ Speak out, or I’ll throttle you ! ”

“ Why, the traps have got him, and that’s all about it, ” said the Dodger, sullenly. “ Come, let go o’ me, will you ! ” And, swinging himself, at one jerk, clean out of the big coat, which he left in the Jew’s hands, the Dodger snatched up the toasting-fork, and made a pass at the merry old gentleman’s waistcoat.

The Jew stepped back in this emergency, with more agility than could have been anticipated in a man of his apparent decrepitude ; and, seizing up the pot, prepared to hurl it at his assailant’s head. But Charley Bates, at this moment, calling his attention by a terrific howl, he suddenly altered its destination, and flung it full at that young gentleman.

“ Why, what the blazes is in the wind now ? ” growled a deep voice. “ Who pitched that ‘ere at me ? It’s well it’s the beer, and not the pot, as hit me, or I’d have settled somebody. Wot’s it all about, Fagin ? Come in, you sneaking warmint ; wot are you stopping outside for as if you was ashamed of your master ! Come in ! ”

The man who growled out these words, was a stoutly-built fellow of about five-and-thirty, in a black velveteen coat, very soiled drab breeches, lace-up half boots, and

Oliver Twist

grey cotton stockings, which enclosed a bulky pair of legs, with large swelling calves. He had a brown hat on his head, and a dirty handkerchief round his neck: with the long frayed end of which he smeared the beer from his face as he spoke. He disclosed, when he had done so, a broad heavy countenance with a beard of three days' growth, and two scowling eyes; one of which displayed various parti-coloured symptoms of having been recently damaged by a blow.

"Come in, d'ye hear?" growled this engaging ruffian.

A white shaggy dog, with his face scratched and torn in twenty different places, skulked into the room.

"What are you up to? Ill-treating the boys, you covetous, avaricious, in-sa-ri-a-ble old fence?" said the man, seating himself deliberately. "I wonder they don't murder you! I would if I was them."

"Hush! hush! Mr. Sikes," said the Jew, trembling; "don't speak so loud."

"None of your mistering," replied the ruffian; "you always mean mischief when you come that. You know my name: out with it! I shan't disgrace it when the time comes."

"Well, well, then—Bill Sikes," said the Jew, with abject humility. "You seem out of humour, Bill."

"Perhaps I am," replied Sikes; "I should think you was rather out of sorts too, unless you mean as little harm when you throw pewter pots about, as you do when you blab and—,"

"Are you mad?" said the Jew, catching the man by the sleeve, and pointing towards the boys.

Mr. Sikes contented himself with tying an imaginary knot under his left ear, and jerking his head over on the right shoulder; a piece of dumb show which the Jew appeared to understand perfectly. He then demanded a glass of liquor.

"And mind you don't poison it," said Mr. Sikes, laying his hat upon the table.

After swallowing two or three glasses of spirits, Mr. Sikes condescended to take some notice of the young gentlemen; which gracious act led to a conversation, in which the cause and manner of Oliver's capture were circumstantially detailed.

Oliver Twist

"I'm afraid," said the Jew, "that he may say something which will get us into trouble."

"That's very likely," returned Sikes with a malicious grin. "You're blowed upon, Fagin."

"And I'm afraid, you see," added the Jew, speaking as if he had not noticed the interruption; and regarding the other closely as he did so,— "I'm afraid that, if the game was up with us, it might be up with a good many more, and that it would come out rather worse for you than it would for me, my dear."

There was a long pause. Every member of the respectable coterie appeared plunged in his own reflections.

"Somebody must find out wot's been done at the office," said Mr. Sikes in a much lower tone than he had taken since he came in.

The Jew nodded assent.

"If he hasn't peached, and is committed, there's no fear till he comes out again," said Mr. Sikes, "and then he must be taken care on. You must get hold of him somehow."

Again the Jew nodded.

The prudence of this line of action, indeed, was obvious; but, unfortunately, there was one very strong objection to its being adopted. This was, that the Dodger, and Charley Bates, and Fagin, and Mr. William Sikes, happened, one and all, to entertain a violent and deeply-rooted antipathy to going near a police-office on any ground or pretext whatever.

How long they might have sat and looked at each other, in a state of uncertainty not the most pleasant of its kind, it is difficult to guess. It is not necessary to make any guesses on the subject, however; for the sudden entrance of the two young ladies whom Oliver had seen on a former occasion, caused the conversation to flow afresh.

"The very thing!" said the Jew. "Bet will go; won't you, my dear?"

"Wheres?" inquired the young lady.

"Only just up to the office, my dear," said the Jew coaxingly.

It is due to the young lady to say that she did not positively affirm that she would not, but that she merely

Oliver Twist

expressed an emphatic and earnest desire to be “ blessed ” if she would.

The Jew’s countenance fell. He turned from this young lady to the other.

“ Nancy, my dear,” said the Jew in a soothing manner, “ what do *you* say ? ”

“ That it won’t do ; so it’s no use a-trying it on, Fagin,” replied Nancy.

“ What do you mean by that ? ” said Mr. Sikes, looking up in a surly manner.

“ What I say, Bill,” replied the lady collectedly.

“ Why, you’re just the very person for it,” reasoned Mr. Sikes : “ nobody about here knows anything of you.”

“ And as I don’t want ‘em to, neither,” replied Nancy in the same composed manner, “ it’s rather more no than yes with me, Bill.”

“ She’ll go, Fagin,” said Sikes.

“ No, she won’t, Fagin,” said Nancy.

“ Yes, she will, Fagin,” said Sikes.

And Mr. Sikes was right. By dint of alternate threats, promises, and bribes, the lady in question was ultimately prevailed upon to undertake the commission. Accordingly, with a clean white apron tied over her gown, and her curl-papers tucked up under a straw bonnet,—both articles of dress being provided from the Jew’s inexhaustible stock,—Miss Nancy prepared to issue forth on her errand.

“ Stop a minute, my dear,” said the Jew, producing a little covered basket. “ Carry that in one hand. It looks more respectable, my dear.”

“ Give her a door-key to carry in her t’other one, Fagin,” said Sikes ; “ it looks real and genivine like.”

“ Yes, yes, my dear, so it does,” said the Jew, hanging a large street-door key on the forefinger of the young lady’s right hand. “ There ; very good ! Very good indeed, my dear ! ” said the Jew, rubbing his hands.

“ Oh, my brother ! My poor, dear, sweet, innocent little brother ! ” exclaimed Nancy, bursting into tears, and wringing the little basket and the street-door key in an agony of distress. “ What has become of him ! Where have they taken him to ! Oh, do have pity, and tell me what’s been done with the dear boy, gentlemen ; do, gentlemen, if you please, gentlemen ! ”

Oliver Twist

Having uttered these words in a most lamentable and heart-broken tone: to the immeasurable delight of her hearers: Miss Nancy paused, winked to the company, nodded smilingly round, and disappeared.

"Ah! she's a clever girl, my dears," said the Jew, turning round to his young friends, and shaking his head gravely, as if in mute admonition to them to follow the bright example they had just beheld.

"She's a honour to her sex," said Mr. Sikes, filling his glass, and smiting the table with his enormous fist. "Here's her health, and wishing they was all like her!"

Nancy made the best of her way to the police-office, where she arrived in perfect safety shortly afterwards.

Entering by the back way, she tapped softly with the key at one of the cell-doors, and listened. There was no sound within: so she coughed and listened again. Still there was no reply: so she spoke.

"Nolly, dear?" murmured Nancy in a gentle voice; "Nolly?"

There was nobody inside but a miserable shoeless criminal, who had been taken up for playing the flute, and who, the offence against society having been clearly proved, had been very properly committed by Mr. Fang to the House of Correction for one month. He made no answer: being occupied in mentally bewailing the loss of the flute, which had been confiscated for the use of the county; so Nancy passed on to the next cell, and knocked there.

"Well!" cried a faint and feeble voice.

"Is there a little boy here?" inquired Nancy, with a preliminary sob.

"No," replied the voice; "God forbid!"

This was a vagrant of sixty-five, who was going to prison for *not* playing the flute; or, in other words, for begging in the streets, and doing nothing for his livelihood. In the next cell, was another man, who was going to the same prison for hawking tin saucepans without a license; thereby doing something for his living, in defiance of the Stamp-office.

But, as neither of these criminals answered to the name of Oliver, or knew anything about him, Nancy made straight up to the bluff officer in the striped waist-

Oliver Twist

coat ; and with the most piteous wailings and lamentations, rendered more piteous by a prompt and efficient use of the street-door key and the little basket, demanded her own dear brother.

"I haven't got him, my dear," said the old man.

"Where is he ?" screamed Nancy, in a distracted manner.

"Why, the gentleman's got him," replied the officer.

"What gentleman ? Oh, gracious heavens ! What gentleman ?" exclaimed Nancy.

In reply to this incoherent questioning, the old man informed the deeply affected sister that Oliver had been taken ill in the office, and discharged in consequence of a witness having proved the robbery to have been committed by another boy, not in custody ; and that the prosecutor had carried him away, in an insensible condition, to his own residence : of and concerning which, all the informant knew was, that it was somewhere at Pentonville.

In a dreadful state of doubt and uncertainty, the agonised young woman staggered to the gate, and then, exchanging her faltering walk for a swift run, returned by the most devious and complicated route she could think of, to the domicile of the Jew.

Mr. Bill Sikes no sooner heard the account of the expedition delivered, than he very hastily called up the white dog, and, putting on his hat, expeditiously departed : without devoting any time to the formality of wishing the company good-morning.

"We must know where he is, my dears ; he must be found," said the Jew, greatly excited. "Charley, do nothing but skulk about, till you bring home some news of him ! Nancy, my dear, I must have him found. I trust to you, my dear,—to you and the Artful for everything ! Stay, stay," added the Jew, unloocking a drawer with a shaking hand ; "there's money, my dears. I shall shut up this shop to-night. You'll know where to find me ! Don't stop here a minute. Not an instant, my dears !"

Oliver Twist

CHAPTER XII

OLIVER soon recovering from the fainting-fit into which Mr. Brownlow's abrupt exclamation had thrown him, the subject of the picture was carefully avoided, both by the old gentleman and Mrs. Bedwin, in the conversation that ensued : which indeed bore no reference to Oliver's history or prospects, but was confined to such topics as might amuse without exciting him. He was still too weak to get up to breakfast ; but, when he came down into the housekeeper's room next day, his first act was to cast an eager glance at the wall, in the hope of again looking on the face of the beautiful lady. His expectations were disappointed, however, for the picture had been removed.

" Ah ! " said the housekeeper, watching the direction of Oliver's eyes. " It is gone, you see."

" I see it is, ma'am," replied Oliver. " Why have they taken it away ? "

" It has been taken down, child, because Mr. Brownlow said, that as it seemed to worry you, perhaps it might prevent your getting well, you know," rejoined the old lady.

" Oh no, indeed. It didn't worry me, ma'am," said Oliver. " I liked to see it. I quite loved it."

" Well, well ! " said the old lady, good-humouredly ; " you get well as fast as ever you can, dear, and it shall be hung up again. There ! I promise you that ! Now, let us talk about something else."

They were happy days, those of Oliver's recovery. Everything was so quiet, and neat, and orderly ; everybody was so kind and gentle ; that after the noise and turbulence in the midst of which he had always lived, it seemed like Heaven itself. He was no sooner strong enough to put his clothes on, properly, than Mr. Brownlow caused a complete new suit, and a new cap, and a new pair of shoes, to be provided for him. As Oliver was told that he might do what he liked with the old clothes, he gave them to a servant who had been very kind to him, and asked her to sell them to a Jew, and keep the money for herself

Oliver Twist

One evening, about a week after the affair of the picture, as he was sitting talking to Mrs. Bedwin, there came a message down from Mr. Brownlow, that if Oliver Twist felt pretty well, he should like to see him in his study, and talk to him a little while.

"Bless us, and save us ! Wash your hands, and let me part your hair nicely for you, child," said Mrs. Bedwin. "Dear heart alive ! If we had known he would have asked for you, we would have put you a clean collar on, and made you as smart as sixpence !"

Oliver did as the old lady bade him ; and tapped at the study door. On Mr. Brownlow calling to him to come in, he found himself in a little back room, quite full of books, with a window, looking into some pleasant little gardens. There was a table drawn up before the window, at which Mr. Brownlow was seated reading. When he saw Oliver, he pushed the book away from him, and told him to come near the table, and sit down. Oliver complied ; marvelling where the people could be found to read such a great number of books as seemed to be written to make the world wiser.

"There are a good many books, are there not, my boy ?" said Mr. Brownlow, observing the curiosity with which Oliver surveyed the shelves that reached from the floor to the ceiling.

"A great number, sir," replied Oliver. "I never saw so many."

"You shall read them, if you behave well," said the old gentleman, kindly ; "and you will like that, better than looking at the outsides. How should you like to grow up a clever man, and write books, eh ?"

"I think I would rather read them, sir," replied Oliver.

"What ! wouldn't you like to be a book-writer ?" said the old gentleman.

Oliver considered a little while ; and at last said, he should think it would be a much better thing to be a book-seller ; upon which the old gentleman laughed heartily, and declared he had said a very good thing. Which Oliver felt glad to have done, though he by no means knew what it was.

"Now," said Mr. Brownlow, speaking if possible in a

Oliver Twist

kinder, but at the same time in a much more serious manner, than Oliver had ever known him assume yet, "I want you to pay great attention, my boy, to what I am going to say. I shall talk to you without any reserve; because I am sure you are as well able to understand me, as many older persons would be."

"Oh, don't tell me you are going to send me away, sir, pray!" exclaimed Oliver, alarmed at the serious tone of the old gentleman's commencement!

"My dear child," said the old gentleman, "you need not be afraid of my deserting you, unless you give me cause."

"I never, never will, sir," interposed Oliver.

"I hope not," rejoined the old gentleman. "I do not think you ever will. I have been deceived, before, in the objects whom I have endeavoured to benefit; but I feel strongly disposed to trust you, nevertheless; and I am more interested in your behalf than I can well account for, even to myself. You say you are an orphan, without a friend in the world; all the inquiries I have been able to make, confirm the statement. Let me hear your story; where you come from; who brought you up; and how you got into the company in which I found you. Speak the truth, and you shall not be friendless while I live."

Oliver was on the point of beginning to relate how he had been brought up at the farm, and carried to the workhouse by Mr. Bumble, when a peculiarly impatient little double-knock was heard at the street-door; and the servant, running upstairs, announced Mr. Grimwig.

"Is he coming up?" inquired Mr. Brownlow.

"Yes, sir," replied the servant. "He asked if there were any mufins in the house; and, when I told him yes, he said he had come to tea."

Mr. Brownlow smiled; and, turning to Oliver, said that Mr. Grimwig was an old friend of his, and he must not mind his being a little rough in his manners; for he was a worthy creature at bottom, as he had reason to know.

"Shall I go downstairs, sir?" inquired Oliver.

"No," replied Mr. Brownlow, "I would rather you remained here."

Oliver Twist

At this moment, there walked into the room : supporting himself by a thick stick : a stout old gentleman, rather lame in one leg, who was dressed in a blue coat, striped waistcoat, nankeen breeches and gaiters, and a broad-brimmed white hat, with the sides turned up with green. The variety of shapes into which his countenance was twisted, defy description. He had a manner of screwing his head on one side when he spoke ; and of looking out of the corners of his eyes at the same time : which irresistibly reminded the beholder of a parrot. In this attitude, he fixed himself, the moment he made his appearance ; and, holding out a small piece of orange-peel at arm's length, exclaimed, in a growling, disconsolate voice,

"Look here ! do you see this ! Isn't it a most wonderful and extraordinary thing that I can't call at a man's house but I find a piece of this poor-surgeon's-friend on the staircase ? I've been lamed with orange-peel once, and I know orange-peel will be my death at last. I will, sir : orange-peel will be my death, or I'll be content to eat my own head, sir ! "

This was the handsome offer with which Mr. Grimwig backed and confirmed nearly every assertion he made.

"I'll eat my head, sir," repeated Mr. Grimwig, striking his stick upon the ground. "Hallo ! what's that !" looking at Oliver, and retreating a pace or two.

"This is young Oliver Twist, whom we were speaking about," said Mr. Brownlow.

Oliver bowed.

"How are you, boy ?" said Mr. Grimwig.

"A great deal better, thank you, sir," replied Oliver.

Mr. Brownlow, seeming to apprehend that his singular friend was about to say something disagreeable, asked Oliver to step downstairs and tell Mrs. Bedwin they were ready for tea ; which, as he did not half like the visitor's manner, he was very happy to do.

"He is a nice-looking boy, is he not ?" inquired Mr. Brownlow.

"I don't know," replied Mr. Grimwig, pettishly.

"Don't know ?"

"No. I don't know. I never see any difference in

Oliver Twist

boys. I only know two sorts of boys. Mealy boys, and beef-faced boys."

"And which is Oliver?"

"Mealy. I know a friend who has a beef-faced boy; a fine boy, they call him; with a round head, and red cheeks, and glaring eyes; a horrid boy; with a body and limbs that appear to be swelling out of the seams of his blue clothes; with the voice of a pilot, and the appetite of a wolf. I know him! The wretch!"

"Come," said Mr. Brownlow, "these are not the characteristics of young Oliver Twist; so he needn't excite your wrath."

"They are not," replied Mr. Grimwig. "He may have worse."

Here, Mr. Brownlow coughed impatiently; which appeared to afford Mr. Grimwig the most exquisite delight.

"He may have worse, I say," repeated Mr. Grimwig. "Where does he come from? Who is he? What is he? He has had a fever. What of that? Fevers are not peculiar to good people; are they? Bad people have fevers sometimes; haven't they, eh?"

Now, the fact was, that in the innermost recesses of his own heart, Mr. Grimwig was strongly disposed to admit that Oliver's appearance and manner were unusually prepossessing; but he had a strong appetite for contradiction; and, inwardly determining that no man should dictate to him whether a boy was well-looking or not, he had resolved, from the first, to oppose his friend.

All this, Mr. Brownlow, knowing his friend's peculiarities, bore with great good-humour; as Mr. Grimwig, at tea, was graciously pleased to express his entire approval of the muffins, matters went on very smoothly; and Oliver, who made one of the party, began to feel more at his ease than he had yet done in the fierce old gentleman's presence.

As fate would have it, Mrs. Bedwin chanced to bring in a small parcel of books, which Mr. Brownlow had that morning purchased of the identical bookstall-keeper, who has already figured in this history; having laid them on the table, she prepared to leave the room.

Oliver Twist

"Stop the boy, Mrs. Bedwin!" said Mr. Brownlow; "there is something to go back."

"He has gone, sir," replied Mrs. Bedwin.

"Call after him," said Mr. Brownlow; "it's particular. He is a poor man, and they are not paid for. There are some books to be taken back, too."

The street door was opened. Oliver ran one way; and the girl ran another; and Mrs. Bedwin stood on the step and screamed for the boy; but there was no boy in sight. Oliver and the girl returned, in a breathless state, to report that there were no tidings of him.

"Dear me, I am very sorry for that," exclaimed Mr. Brownlow; "I particularly wished those books to be returned to-night."

"Send Oliver with them," said Mr. Grimwig, with an ironical smile; "he will be sure to deliver them safely, you know."

"Yes; do let me take them, if you please, sir," said Oliver. "I'll run all the way, sir."

"You *shall* go, my dear," said the old gentleman. "The books are on a chair by my table. Fetch them down."

Oliver, delighted to be of use, brought down the books under his arm in a great bustle; and waited, cap in hand, to hear what message he was to take.

"You are to say," said Mr. Brownlow, "that you have brought those books back; and that you have come to pay the four pound ten I owe him. This is a five-pound note, so you will have to bring me back ten shillings change."

"I won't be ten minutes, sir," replied Oliver, eagerly. Having buttoned up the bank-note in his jacket pocket, and placed the books carefully under his arm, he made a respectful bow, and left the room.

"Let me see; he'll be back in twenty minutes, at the longest," said Mr. Brownlow, pulling out his watch, and placing it on the table. "It will be dark by that time."

"Oh! you really expect him to come back, do you?" inquired Mr. Grimwig.

"Don't you?" asked Mr. Brownlow, smiling.

The spirit of contradiction was strong in Mr. Grimwig's

Oliver Twist

breast, at the moment ; and it was rendered stronger by his friend's confident smile.

"No," he said, smiting the table with his fist, "I do not. The boy has a new suit of clothes on his back, a set of valuable books under his arm, and a five-pound note in his pocket. He'll join his old friends the thieves, and laugh at you. If ever that boy returns to this house, sir, I'll eat my head."

With these words he drew his chair closer to the table ; and there the two friends sat, in silent expectation, with the watch between them.

Meanwhile, Oliver was on his way to the book-stall. When he got into Clerkenwell, he accidentally turned down a bye-street which was not exactly in his way ; but not discovering his mistake until he had got half-way down it, and knowing it must lead in the right direction, he did not think it worth while to turn back ; and so marched on, as quickly as he could, with the books under his arm.

He was walking along, thinking how happy and contented he ought to feel ; when he was startled by a young woman screaming out very loud, "Oh, my dear brother ! " And he had hardly looked up, to see what the matter was, when he was stopped by having a pair of arms thrown tight round his neck.

"Don't," cried Oliver, struggling. "Let go of me. Who is it ? What are you stopping me for ? "

The only reply to this, was a great number of loud lamentations from the young woman who had embraced him ; and who had a little basket and a street-door key in her hand.

"Oh my gracious ! " said the young woman, "I've found him ! Oh ! Oliver ! Oliver ! Oh you naughty boy, to make me suffer such distress on your account ! Come home, dear, come. Oh, I've found him. Thank gracious goodness heavins, I've found him ! " With these incoherent exclamations, the young woman burst into another fit of crying, and got so dreadfully hysterical, that a couple of women who came up at the moment asked a butcher's boy with a shiny head of hair anointed with suet, who was also looking on, whether he didn't think he had better run for the doctor. To which, the

Oliver Twist

butcher's boy : who appeared of a lounging, not to say indolent disposition : replied, that he thought not.

" Oh no, no, never mind," said the young woman, grasping Oliver's hand ; " I'm better now. Come home directly, you cruel boy ! Come ! "

" What's the matter, ma'am ? " inquired one of the women.

" Oh, ma'am," replied the young woman, " he ran away, near a month ago, from his parents, who are hard-working and respectable people ; and went and joined a set of thieves and bad characters ; and almost broke his mother's heart."

" Young wretch ! " said one woman.

" Go home, do, you little brute," said the other.

" I am not," replied Oliver, greatly alarmed. " I don't know her. I haven't any sister, or father and mother either. I'm an orphan ; I live at Pentonville."

" Only hear him, how he braves it out ! " cried the young woman.

" Why, it's Nancy ! " exclaimed Oliver ; who now saw her face for the first time ; and started back, in irrepressible astonishment.

" You see he knows me ! " cried Nancy, appealing to the bystanders. " He can't help himself. Make him come home, there's good people, or he'll kill his dear mother and father, and break my heart ! "

" What's this ? " said a man, bursting out of a beer-shop, with a white dog at his heels ; " young Oliver ! Come home to your poor mother, you young dog ! Come home directly."

" I don't belong to them. I don't know them. Help ! help ! " cried Oliver, struggling in the man's powerful grasp.

" Help ! " repeated the man. " Yes ; I'll help you, you young rascal ! What books are these ? You've been a-stealing 'em, have you ? Give 'em here." With these words, the man tore the volumes from his grasp, and struck him on the head.

" That's right ! " cried a looker-on, from a garret-window. " That's the only way of bringing him to his senses ! "

" To be sure ! " cried a sleepy-faced carpenter, casting an approving look at the garret-window.

Oliver Twist

“ It’ll do him good ! ” said the two women.

“ And he shall have it, too ! ” rejoined the man, administering another blow, and seizing Oliver by the collar. “ Come on, you young villain ! Here, Bill’s-eye, mind him, boy ! Mind him ! ”

Weak with recent illness ; stupefied by the blows and the suddenness of the attack ; terrified by the fierce growling of the dog, and the brutality of the man ; overpowered by the conviction of the bystanders that he really was the hardened little wretch he was described to be ; what could one poor child do ! Darkness had set in ; it was a low neighbourhood ; no help was near ; resistance was useless. In another moment, he was dragged into a labyrinth of dark narrow courts, and was forced along them at a pace which rendered the few cries he dared to give utterance to, unintelligible. It was of little moment, indeed, whether they were intelligible or no ; for there was nobody to care for them, had they been ever so plain.

The gas-lamps were lighted ; Mrs. Bedwin was waiting anxiously at the open door ; the servant had run up the street twenty times to see if there were any traces of Oliver ; and still the two old gentlemen sat, perseveringly, in the dark parlour, with the watch between them.

CHAPTER XIII

THE narrow streets and courts, at length, terminated in a large open space ; scattered about which, were pens for beasts, and other indications of a cattle-market. Sikes slackened his pace when they reached this spot : the girl being quite unable to support any longer, the rapid rate at which they had hitherto walked. Turning to Oliver, he roughly commanded him to take hold of Nancy’s hand.

“ Do you hear ? ” growled Sikes, as Oliver hesitated, and looked round.

They were in a dark corner, quite out of the track of

Oliver Twist

passengers. Oliver saw, but too plainly, that resistance would be of no avail. He held out his hand, which Nancy clasped tight in hers.

"Give me the other," said Sikes, seizing Oliver's unoccupied hand. "Here, Bull's-eye!"

The dog looked up, and growled.

"See here, boy!" said Sikes, putting his other hand to Oliver's throat; "if he speaks ever so soft a word, hold him! D'y'e mind!"

The dog growled again; and licking his lips, eyed Oliver as if he were anxious to attach himself to his windpipe without delay.

It was Smithfield that they were crossing, although it might have been Grosvenor Square, for anything Oliver knew to the contrary. The night was dark and foggy. The lights in the shops could scarcely struggle through the heavy mist, which thickened every moment and shrouded the streets and houses in gloom; rendering the strange place still stranger in Oliver's eyes; and making his uncertainty the more dismal and depressing.

They walked on, by little-frequented and dirty ways, for a full half-hour: meeting very few people, and those appearing from their looks to hold much the same position in society as Mr. Sikes himself. At length they turned into a very filthy narrow street, nearly full of old-clothes shops; the dog running forward, as if conscious that there was no further occasion for his keeping on guard, stopped before the door of a shop that was closed and apparently untenanted; the house was in a ruinous condition, and on the door was nailed a board, intimating that it was to let: which looked as if it had hung there for many years.

"All right," cried Sikes, glancing cautiously about.

Nancy stooped below the shutters, and Oliver heard the sound of a bell. They crossed to the opposite side of the street, and stood for a few moments under a lamp. A noise, as if a sash-window were gently raised, was heard; and soon afterwards the door softly opened. Mr. Sikes then seized the terrified boy by the collar with very little ceremony; and all three were quickly inside the house.

Oliver Twist

The passage was perfectly dark. They waited, while the person who had let them in, chained and barred the door.

“ Anybody here ? ” inquired Sikes.

“ No, ” replied a voice, which Oliver thought he had heard before.

“ Is the old 'un here ? ” asked the robber.

“ Yes, ” replied the voice ; “ and precious down in the mouth he has been. Won't he be glad to see you ? Oh, no ! ”

The style of this reply, as well as the voice which delivered it, seemed familiar to Oliver's ears ; but it was impossible to distinguish even the form of the speaker in the darkness.

“ Let's have a glim, ” said Sikes, “ or we shall go breaking our necks, or treading on the dog. Look after your legs if you do ! ”

“ Stand still a moment, and I'll get you one, ” replied the voice. The receding footsteps of the speaker were heard ; and, in another minute, the form of Mr. John Dawkins, otherwise the Artful Dodger, appeared. He bore in his right hand a tallow candle stuck in the end of a cleft stick.

The young gentleman did not stop to bestow any other mark of recognition upon Oliver than a humorous grin ; but, turning away, beckoned the visitors to follow him down a flight of stairs. They crossed an empty kitchen ; and, opening the door of a low earthy-smelling room, which seemed to have been built in a small back-yard, were received with a shout of laughter.

“ Oh, my wig, my wig ! ” cried Master Charles Bates, from whose lungs the laughter had proceeded ; “ here he is ! oh, cry, here he is ! Oh, Fagin, look at him ! Look at his togs ! Supersine cloth, and the heavy swell cut ! Oh, my eye, what a game ! And his books, too ! Nothing but a gentleman, Fagin ! ”

“ Delighted to see you looking so well, my dear, ” said the Jew, bowing with mock humility. “ The Artful shall give you another suit, my dear, for fear you should spoil that Sunday one. Why didn't you write, my dear, and say you were coming ? We'd have got something warm for supper.”

Oliver Twist

At this, Master Bates roared again : so loud, that Fagin himself relaxed, and even the Dodger smiled ; but as the Artful drew forth the five-pound note at that instant, it is doubtful whether the sally or the discovery awakened his merriment.

" Hallo ! what's that ? " inquired Sikes, stepping forward as the Jew seized the note. " That's mine, Fagin."

" No, no, my dear," said the Jew. " Mine, Bill, mine. You shall have the books."

" Come ! Hand over, will you ? " said Sikes.

" This is hardly fair, Bill ; hardly fair, is it, Nancy ? " inquired the Jew.

" Fair, or not fair," retorted Sikes, " hand over, I tell you ! Do you think Nancy and me has got nothing else to do with our precious time but to spend it in scouting arter, and kidnapping, every young boy as gets grabbed through you ? Give it here, you avaricious old skeleton ; give it here ! "

With this gentle remonstrance, Mr. Sikes plucked the note from between the Jew's finger and thumb ; and looking the old man coolly in the face, folded it up small, and tied it in his neckerchief.

" That's for our share of the trouble," said Sikes ; " and not half enough, neither. You may keep the books, if you're fond of reading. If you a'n't, sell 'em."

" They belong to the old gentleman," said Oliver, wringing his hands ; " to the good, kind old gentleman who took me into his house, and had me nursed, when I was near dying of the fever. Oh, pray send them back. He'll think I stole them."

" The boy's right," remarked Fagin, looking covertly round, and knitting his shaggy eyebrows into a hard knot. " You're right, Oliver, you're right ; they will think you have stolen 'em. Ha ! ha ! " chuckled the Jew, rubbing his hands ; " it couldn't have happened better, if we had chosen our time ! "

" Of course it couldn't," replied Sikes ; " I know'd that, directly I see him coming through Clerkenwell, with the books under his arm. He's safe enough."

Oliver had looked from one to the other, while these words were being spoken, as if he were bewildered, and

Oliver Twist

could scarcely understand what passed ; but when Bill Sikes concluded, he jumped suddenly to his feet, and tore wildly from the room : uttering shrieks for help, which made the bare old house echo to the roof.

“ Keep back the dog, Bill ! ” cried Nancy, springing before the door, and closing it, as the Jew and his two pupils darted out in pursuit. “ Keep back the dog ; he’ll tear the boy to pieces.”

“ Serve him right ! ” cried Sikes, struggling to disengage himself from the girl’s grasp. “ Stand off from me, or I’ll split your head against the wall.”

“ I don’t care for that, Bill, I don’t care for that,” screamed the girl, struggling violently with the man : “ the child shan’t be torn down by the dog, unless you kill me first.”

“ Shan’t he ! ” said Sikes, setting his teeth. “ I’ll soon do that, if you don’t keep off.”

The housebreaker flung the girl from him to the farther end of the room, just as the Jew and the two boys returned, dragging Oliver among them.

“ So you wanted to get away, my dear, did you ? ” said the Jew, taking up a jagged and knotted club which lay in a corner of the fireplace ; “ eh ? ”

Oliver made no reply. But he watched the Jew’s motions, and breathed quickly.

“ Wanted to get assistance ; called for the police ; did you ? ” sneered the Jew, catching the boy by the arm. “ We’ll cure you of that, my young master.”

The Jew inflicted a smart blow on Oliver’s shoulders with the club ; and was raising it for a second, when the girl, rushing forward, wrested it from his hand. She flung it into the fire, with a force that brought some of the glowing coals whirling out into the room.

“ I won’t stand by and see it done, Fagin,” cried the girl. “ You’ve got the boy, and what more would you have ? —Let him be—let him be.”

The girl stamped her foot violently on the floor ; and with her lips compressed, and her hands clenched, looked alternately at the Jew and the other robber : her face quite colourless from the passion of rage into which she had gradually worked herself.

“ Why, Nancy ! ” said the Jew, in a soothing tone.

Oliver Twist

"you're more clever than ever to-night. Ha ! ha ! my dear, you are acting beautifully."

"Am I !" said the girl. "Take care I don't overdo it. I wish I had been struck dead in the street, before I had lent a hand in bringing him here. He's a thief, a liar, all that's bad, from this night forth. Isn't that enough, without blows ? "

"Come, come," said the Jew, in a remonstratory tone, and motioning towards the boys, who were eagerly attentive to all that passed ; "we must have civil words."

"Civil words !" cried the girl.

"Charley, show Oliver to bed."

"I suppose he'd better not wear his best clothes to-morrow, Fagin, had he ?" inquired Charley Bates.

"Certainly not," replied the Jew, reciprocating the grin with which Charley put the question.

Master Bates, apparently much delighted with his commission, took the cleft stick : and led Oliver into an adjacent kitchen, where there were two or three of the beds on which he had slept before ; and here, with many uncontrollable bursts of laughter, he produced the identical old suit of clothes which Oliver had so much congratulated himself upon leaving off at Mr. Brownlow's ; and the accidental display of which, to Fagin, by the Jew who purchased them, had been the very first clue received, of his whereabouts.

"Pull off the smart ones," said Charley, "and I'll give 'em to Fagin to take care of. What fun it is ! "

Poor Oliver unwillingly complied. Master Bates rolling up the new clothes under his arm, departed from the room, leaving Oliver in the dark, and locking the door behind him.

CHAPTER XIV

ABOUT noon next day, when the Dodger and Master Bates had gone out to pursue their customary avocations, Mr. Fagin took the opportunity of reading Oliver a long lecture on the crying sin of ingratitude : of which he clearly demonstrated he had been guilty, to no

Oliver Twist

ordinary extent, in wilfully absenting himself from the society of his anxious friends; and, still more, in endeavouring to escape from them after so much trouble and expense had been incurred in his recovery. Mr. Fagin laid great stress on the fact of his having taken Oliver in, and cherished him, when, without his timely aid, he might have perished with hunger; and he related the dismal and affecting history of a young lad whom, in his philanthropy, he had succoured under parallel circumstances, but who, proving unworthy of his confidence and evincing a desire to communicate with the police, had unfortunately come to be hanged at the Old Bailey one morning. Mr. Fagin did not seek to conceal his share in the catastrophe, but lamented with tears in his eyes that the wrong-headed and treacherous behaviour of the young person in question, had rendered it necessary that he should become the victim of certain evidence for the Crown: which, if it were not precisely true, was indispensably necessary for the safety of him (Mr. Fagin) and a few select friends.

The Jew patted Oliver on the head, and said, that if he kept himself quiet, and applied himself to business, he saw they would be very good friends yet. Then, taking his hat, and covering himself with an old patched great-coat, he went out, and locked the room-door behind him.

And so Oliver remained all that day, and for the greater part of many subsequent days, seeing nobody, between early morning and midnight, and left during the long hours to commune with his own thoughts.

After the lapse of a week or so, the Jew left the room-door unlocked; and he was at liberty to wander about the house.

It was a very dirty place. The rooms upstairs had great high wooden chimney-pieces and large doors, with panelled walls and cornices to the ceilings; which, although they were black with neglect and dust, were ornamented in various ways. From all of these tokens Oliver concluded that a long time ago, before the old Jew was born, it had belonged to better people, and had perhaps been quite gay and handsome: dismal and dreary as it looked now.

Oliver Twist

One afternoon, the Dodger and Master Bates being engaged out that evening, the first-named young gentleman took it into his head to evince some anxiety regarding the decoration of his person (to do him justice, this was by no means an habitual weakness with him); and, with this end and aim, he condescendingly commanded Oliver to assist him in his toilet, straightway.

Oliver was but too glad to make himself useful, too happy to have some faces, however bad, to look upon, to throw any objection in the way of this proposal. So he at once expressed his readiness; and, kneeling on the floor, while the Dodger sat upon the table so that he could take his foot in his lap, he applied himself to a process which Mr. Dawkins designated as "japanning his trotter-cases." The phrase, rendered into plain English, signifieth, cleaning his boots.

The Dodger looked down on Oliver, with a thoughtful countenance, for a brief space; and then, raising his head, and heaving a gentle sigh, said, half in abstraction, and half to Master Bates :

" What a pity it is he isn't a prig ! "

" Ah ! " said Master Charles Bates; " he don't know what's good for him."

The Dodger sighed again, and resumed his pipe: as did Charley Bates. They both smoked, for some seconds, in silence.

" I suppose you don't even know what a prig is ? " said the Dodger mournfully.

" I think I know that," replied Oliver, looking up. " It's a th—; you're one, are you not ? " inquired Oliver, checking himself.

" I am," replied the Dodger. " So's Charley. So's Fagin. So's Sikes. So's Nancy. So's Bet. So we all are, down to the dog. And he's the downiest one of the lot ! "

" And the least given to preaching," added Charley Bates.

" He wouldn't so much as bark in a witness-box, for fear of committing himself; no, not if you tied him up in one, and left him there without wittles for a fortnight," said the Dodger.

" Not a bit of it," observed Charley.

Oliver Twist

"He's a rum dog. Don't he look fierce at any strange cove that laughs or sings when he's in company!" pursued the Dodger. "Won't he growl at all, when he hears a fiddle playing! And don't he hate other dogs as ain't of his breed! Oh, no!"

"He's an out-and-out Christian," said Charley.

"Well, well," said the Dodger, recurring to the point from which they had strayed, "this hasn't got anything to do with young Green here."

"No more it has," said Charley. "Why don't you put yourself under Fagin, Oliver?"

"And make your fortun' out of hand?" added the Dodger, with a grin.

"And so be able to retire on your property, and do the genteel: as I mean to, in the very next leap-year but four that ever comes, and the forty-second Tuesday in Trinity-week," said Charley Bates.

"I don't like it," rejoined Oliver, timidly; "I wish they would let me go. I—I—would rather go."

"Go!" exclaimed the Dodger. "Why, where's your spirit? Don't you take any pride out of yourself? Would you go and be dependent on your friends?"

"Oh, blow that!" said Master Bates: drawing two or three silk handkerchiefs from his pocket, and tossing them into a cupboard, "that's too mean, that is."

"I couldn't do it," said the Dodger, with an air of haughty disgust.

"You can leave your friends, though," said Oliver with a half-smile; "and let them be punished for what you did."

"That," rejoined the Dodger, with a wave of his pipe, "that was all out of consideration for Fagin, 'cause the traps know that we work together, and he might have got into trouble if we hadn't made our lucky; that was the move, wasn't it, Charley?"

Master Bates nodded assent, and would have spoken; but the recollection of Oliver's flight came so suddenly upon him, that the smoke he was inhaling got entangled with a laugh, and went up into his head, and down into his throat: and brought on a fit of coughing and stamping, about five minutes long.

"Look here!" said the Dodger, drawing forth a

Oliver Twist

handful of shillings and half-pence. "Here's a jolly life ! What's the odds where it comes from ? Here, catch hold ; there's plenty more where they were took from. You won't, won't you ? Oh, you precious flat ! "

"It's naughty, ain't it, Oliver ?" inquired Charley Bates. "He'll come to be scragged, won't he ?"

"I don't know what that means," replied Oliver.

"Something in this way, old feller," said Charley. As he said it, Master Bates caught up an end of his neckerchief ; and, holding it erect in the air, dropped his head on his shoulder, and jerked a curious sound through his teeth : thereby indicating, by a lively pantomimic representation, that scragging and hanging were one and the same thing.

"That's what it means," said Charley. "Look how he stares, Jack ! I never did see such prime company as that 'ere boy ; he'll be the death of me, I know he will." Master Charles Bates, having laughed heartily again, resumed his pipe with tears in his eyes.

"You've been brought up bad," said the Dodger, surveying his boots with much satisfaction when Oliver had polished them. "Fagin will make something of you, though, or you'll be the first he ever had that turned out unprofitable. If you don't take pocket-handkchers and watches, some other cove will ; so that the coves that lose 'em will be all the worse, and you'll be all the worse too, and nobody half a ha'porth the better, except the chaps wot gets them—and you've just as good a right to them as they have."

"To be sure, to be sure !" said the Jew, who had entered, unseen by Oliver. "It all lies in a nutshell, my dear ; in a nutshell, take the Dodger's word for it. Ha ! ha ! ha ! He understands the catechism of his trade."

The old man rubbed his hands gleefully together, as he corroborated the Dodger's reasoning in these terms ; and chuckled with delight at his pupil's proficiency.

The conversation proceeded no farther at this time, for the Jew had returned home accompanied by Miss Betsy, and a gentleman whom Oliver had never seen before, but who was accosted by the Dodger as Tom Chitling.

Oliver Twist

Mr. Chitling was older in years than the Dodger : having perhaps numbered eighteen winters ; but there was a degree of deference in his deportment towards that young gentleman which seemed to indicate that he felt himself conscious of a slight inferiority in point of genius and professional acquirements. He had small twinkling eyes, and a pock-marked face ; wore a fur cap, a dark corduroy jacket, greasy fustian trousers, and an apron. His wardrobe was, in truth, rather out of repair ; but he excused himself to the company by stating that his "time" was only out an hour before ; and that, in consequence of having worn the regimentals for six weeks past, he had not been able to bestow any attention on his private clothes. Mr. Chitling wound up his observations by stating that he had not touched a drop of anything for forty-two mortal long hard-working days ; and that he "wished he might be busted if he warn't as dry as a lime-basket."

"Where do you think this gentleman has come from, Oliver ?" inquired the Jew, with a grin, as the other boys put a bottle of spirits on the table.

"I—I—don't know, sir," replied Oliver.

"Who's that ?" inquired Tom Chitling, casting a contemptuous look at Oliver.

"A young friend of mine, my dear," replied the Jew.

"He's in luck, then," said the young man, with a meaning look at Fagin. "Never mind where I came from, young 'un ; you'll find your way there, soon enough, I'll bet a crown !"

At this sally, the boys laughed. After some more jokes on the same subject, they exchanged a few short whispers with Fagin ; and withdrew.

From this day, Oliver was seldom left alone ; but was placed in almost constant communication with the two boys, who played the old game with the Jew every day : whether for their own improvement or Oliver's, Mr. Fagin best knew. At other times the old man would tell them stories of robberies he had committed in his younger days : mixed up with so much that was droll and curious, that Oliver could not help laughing heartily, and showing that he was amused in spite of all his better feelings.

Oliver Twist

CHAPTER XV

IT was a chill, damp, windy night, when the Jew: buttoning his great-coat tight round his shrivelled body, and pulling the collar up over his ears so as completely to obscure the lower part of his face: emerged from his den. He paused on the step as the door was locked and chained behind him; and having listened while the boys made all secure, and until their retreating footsteps were no longer audible, slunk down the street as quickly as he could.

The house to which Oliver had been conveyed, was in the neighbourhood of Whitechapel. The Jew stopped for an instant at the corner of the street; and, glancing suspiciously round, crossed the road, and struck off in the direction of Spitalfields.

He kept on his course, through many winding and narrow ways, until he reached Bethnal Green; then, turning suddenly off to the left, he soon became involved in a maze of the mean and dirty streets which abound in that close and densely-populated quarter.

The Jew was evidently too familiar with the ground he traversed to be at all bewildered, either by the darkness of the night, or the intricacies of the way. He hurried through several alleys and streets, and at length turned into one, lighted only by a single lamp at the farther end. At the door of a house in this street, he knocked; having exchanged a few muttered words with the person who opened it, he walked upstairs.

A dog growled as he touched the handle of a room-door; and a man's voice demanded who was there.

"Only me, Bill; only me, my dear," said the Jew, looking in.

"Bring in your body then," said Sikes. "Lie down, you stupid brute! Don't you know the devil when he's got a great-coat on?"

Apparently, the dog had been somewhat deceived by Mr. Fagin's outer garment; for as the Jew unbuttoned it, and threw it over the back of a chair, he retired to the corner from which he had risen: wagging his tail

Oliver Twist

as he went, to show that he was as well satisfied as it was in his nature to be.

“ Well ! ” said Sikes.

“ Well, my dear,” replied the Jew.—“ Ah ! Nancy.”

The latter recognition was uttered with just enough of embarrassment to imply a doubt of its reception ; for Mr. Fagin and his young friend had not met, since she had interfered in behalf of Oliver. All doubts upon the subject, if he had any, were speedily removed by the young lady’s behaviour. She took her feet off the fender, pushed back her chair, and bade Fagin draw up his, without saying more about it : for it was a cold night, and no mistake.

“ It is cold, Nancy dear,” said the Jew, as he warmed his skinny hands over the fire. “ It seems to go right through one,” added the old man, touching his side.

“ It must be a piercer, if it finds its way through *your* heart,” said Mr. Sikes. “ Give him something to drink, Nancy.”

Nancy quickly brought a bottle from a cupboard, in which there were many. Sikes, pouring out a glass of brandy, bade the Jew drink it off.

“ Quite enough, quite, thankye, Bill,” replied the Jew, putting down the glass, after just setting his lips to it.

“ What ! You’re afraid of our getting the better of you, are you ? ” inquired Sikes, fixing his eyes on the Jew. “ Ugh ! ”

With a hoarse grunt of contempt, Mr. Sikes seized the glass, and threw the remainder of its contents into the ashes : as a preparatory ceremony to filling it again for himself : which he did at once.

The Jew glanced round the room, as his companion tossed down the second glassful ; not in curiosity, for he had seen it often before ; but in a restless and suspicious manner habitual to him. It was a meanly-furnished apartment, with nothing but the contents of the closet to induce the belief that its occupier was anything but a working man ; and with no more suspicious articles displayed to view than two or three heavy bludgeons which stood in a corner, and a “ life-preserver ” that hung over the chimney-piece.

Oliver Twist

"There," said Sikes, smacking his lips. "Now I'm ready."

"For business?" inquired the Jew.

"For business," replied Sikes; "so say what you've got to say."

"About the crib at Chertsey, Bill?" said the Jew, drawing his chair forward, and speaking in a very low voice.

"Yes. Wot about it?" inquired Sikes.

"When is it to be done, Bill, eh? When is it to be done? Such platc, my dear, such plate!" said the Jew: rubbing his hands, and elevating his eyebrows in a rapture of anticipation.

"Not at all," replied Sikes coldly.

"Not to be done at all!" echoed the Jew, leaning back in his chair.

"No, not at all," rejoined Sikes. "At least it can't be a put-up job, as we expected."

"Then it hasn't been properly gone about," said the Jew, turning pale with anger. "Don't tell me!"

"But I will tell you," retorted Sikes. "Who are you that's not to be told? I tell you that Toby Crackit has been hanging about the place for a fortnight, and he can't get one of the servants into a line."

"Do you mean to tell me, Bill," said the Jew: softening as the other grew heated: "that neither of the two men in the house can be got over?"

"Yes, I do mean to tell you so," replied Sikes. "The old lady has had 'em these twenty year; and if you were to give 'em five hundred pound, they wouldn't be in it."

The Jew looked blank at this inforimation. After ruminating for some minutes with his chin sunk on his breast, he raised his head and said, with a deep sigh, that if flash Toby Crackit reported aright, he feared the game was up.

"And yet," said the old man, dropping his hands on his knees, "it's a sad thing, my dear, to lose so much when we had set our hearts upon it."

"So it is," said Mr. Sikes. "Worse luck!"

A long silence ensued, during which the Jew was plunged in deep thought.

Oliver Twist

“ Fagin,” said Sikes, abruptly breaking the stillness that prevailed ; “ is it worth fifty shiners extra, if it’s safely done from the outside ? ”

“ Yes,” said the Jew, as suddenly rousing himself.

“ Is it a bargain ? ” inquired Sikes.

“ Yes, my dear, yes,” rejoined the Jew ; his eyes glistening, and every muscle in his face working, with the excitement that the inquiry had awakened.

“ Then,” said Sikes, thrusting aside the Jew’s hand, with some disdain, “ let it come off as soon as you like. Toby and me were over the garden-wall the night afore last, sounding the panels of the door and shutters. The crib’s barred up at night like a jail ; but there’s one part we can crack, safe and softly.”

“ Which is that, Bill ? ” asked the Jew, eagerly.

“ Why,” whispered Sikes, “ as you cross the lawn—”

“ Yes ? ” said the Jew, bending his head forward, with his eyes almost starting out of it.

“ Umph ! ” cried Sikes, stopping short, as the girl, scarcely moving her head, looked suddenly round, and pointed for an instant to the Jew’s face. “ Never mind which part it is. You can’t do it without me, I know ; but it’s best to be on the safe side when one deals with you.”

“ As you like, my dear, as you like,” replied the Jew. “ Is there no help wanted, but yours and Toby’s ? ”

“ None,” said Sikes. “ ‘Cept a centre-bit and a boy. The first we’ve both got ; the second you must find us.”

“ A boy ! ” exclaimed the Jew. “ Oh ! then it’s a panel, eh ? ”

“ Never mind wot it is ! ” replied Sikes. “ I want a boy, and he mustn’t be a big ‘un.”

“ Oliver’s the boy for you, my dear,” said the Jew in a hoarse whisper ; laying his finger on the side of his nose, and grinning frightfully.

“ Well, he is just the size I want,” said Mr. Sikes, ruminating.

“ And will do everything you want, Bill, my dear,” interposed the Jew ; “ he can’t help himself. That is, if you frighten him enough.”

“ Frighten him ! ” echoed Sikes. “ It’ll be no sham frightening, mind you. If there’s anything queer about

Oliver Twist

him when we once get into the work; in for a penny, in for a pound. You won't see him alive again, Fagin. Think of that, before you send him."

"I've thought of it all," said the Jew with energy. "I've—I've had my eye upon him, my dears, close—close. Once let him feel that he is one of us; once fill his mind with the idea that he has been a thief; and he's ours! Ours for his life."

"And wot," said Sikes, scowling fiercely on his agreeable friend, "wot makes you take so much pains about one chalk-faced kid, when you know there are fifty boys snoozing about Common Garden every night, as you might pick and choose from?"

"Because they're of no use to me, my dear," replied the Jew, with some confusion, "not worth the taking. Their looks convict 'em when they get into trouble, and I lose 'em all. With this boy, properly managed, my dears, I could do what I couldn't with twenty of them. Besides," said the Jew, recovering his self-possession, "he has us now if he could only give us leg-bail again; and he *must* be in the same boat with us. Never mind how he came there; it's quite enough for my power over him that he was in a robbery; that's all I want."

"When is it to be done?" asked Nancy.

"Ah, to be sure," said the Jew; "when is it to be done, Bill?"

"I planned with Toby, the night arter to-morrow," rejoined Sikes in a surly voice, "if he heerd nothing from me to the contrary."

"Good," said the Jew; "there's no moon."

"No," rejoined Sikes.

"It's all arranged about bringing off the swag, is it?" asked the Jew.

Sikes nodded.

"And about—"

"Oh, ah, it's all planned," rejoined Sikes, interrupting him. "Never mind particulars. You'd better bring the boy here to-morrow night. I shall get off the stones an hour arter daybreak. Then you hold your tongue and keep the melting-pot ready, and that's all you'll have to do."

Oliver Twist

After some discussion, in which all three took an active part, it was decided that Nancy should repair to the Jew's next evening when the night had set in, and bring Oliver away with her; Fagin craftily observing, that, if he evinced any disinclination to the task, he would be more willing to accompany the girl who had so recently interfered in his behalf, than anybody else.

CHAPTER XVI

WHEN Oliver awoke in the morning, he was a good deal surprised to find that a new pair of shoes, with strong thick soles, had been placed at his bedside; and that his old shoes had been removed. At first, he was pleased with the discovery: hoping that it might be the forerunner of his release; but such thoughts were quickly dispelled, on his sitting down to breakfast along with the Jew, who told him, in a tone and manner which increased his alarm, that he was to be taken to the residence of Bill Sikes that night.

"To—to—stop there, sir?" asked Oliver, anxiously.

"No, no, my dear. Not to stop there," replied the Jew. "We shouldn't like to lose you. Don't be afraid, Oliver, you shall come back to us again."

The old man, who was stooping over the fire toasting a piece of bread, looked round and chuckled as if to show that he knew Oliver would still be very glad to get away if he could.

"I suppose," said the Jew, fixing his eyes on Oliver, "you want to know what you're going to Bill's for—eh, my dear?"

Oliver coloured, involuntarily, to find that the old thief had been reading his thoughts; but boldly said, Yes, he did want to know.

"Why, do you think?" inquired Fagin, parrying the question.

"Indeed I don't know, sir," replied Oliver.

"Bah!" said the Jew, turning away with a dis-

Oliver Twist

“Appointed countenance from a close perusal of the boy’s face. “Wait till Bill tells you, then.”

The Jew seemed much vexed by Oliver’s not expressing any greater curiosity on the subject ; but the truth is, that, although Oliver felt very anxious, he was too much confused by the earnest cunning of Fagin’s looks, and his own speculations, to make any further inquiries just then. He had no other opportunity ; for the Jew remained very surly and silent till night : when he prepared to go abroad.

“You may burn a candle,” said the Jew, putting one upon the table. “Good night !”

“Good night !” replied Oliver, softly.

The Jew walked to the door : looking over his shoulder at the boy as he went. Suddenly stopping, he called him by his name.

“Take heed, Oliver ! take heed !” said the old man, shaking his right hand before him in a warning manner. “He’s a rough man, and thinks nothing of blood when his own is up. Whatever falls out, say nothing ; and do what he bids you. Mind !” Placing a strong emphasis on the last word, he suffered his features gradually to resolve themselves into a ghastly grin, and, nodding his head, left the room.

Oliver leaned his head upon his hand when the old man disappeared, and pondered, with a trembling heart, on the words he had just heard. The more he thought of the Jew’s admonition, the more he was at a loss to divine its real purpose and meaning. He could think of no bad object to be attained by sending him to Sikes, which would not be equally well answered by his remaining with Fagin ; and after meditating for a long time, concluded that he had been selected to perform some ordinary menial offices for the housebreaker until another boy, better suited for his purpose, could be engaged. He was too well accustomed to suffering, and had suffered too much where he was, to bewail the prospect of change very severely. He remained lost in thought for some minutes, when a rustling noise aroused him.

“What’s that ?” he cried, starting up, and catching sight of a figure standing by the door. “Who’s there ?”

Oliver Twist

"Me. Only me," replied a tremulous voice. "Now, Nolly, dear, are you ready?"

Oliver raised the candle above his head: and looked towards the door. It was Nancy.

"Am I to go with you?" asked Oliver.

"Yes; I have come from Bill," replied the girl. "You are to go with me."

"What for?" asked Oliver, recoiling.

"What for?" echoed the girl, raising her eyes, and averting them again, the moment they encountered the boy's face. "Oh! For no harm."

"I don't believe it," said Oliver.

"Have it your own way," rejoined the girl, affecting to laugh. "For no good, then."

Oliver could see that he had some power over the girl's better feelings, and, for an instant, thought of appealing to her compassion for his helpless state. But, then, the thought darted across his mind that it was barely eleven o'clock; and that many people were still in the streets: of whom surely some might be found to give credence to his tale. As the reflection occurred to him, he stepped forward: and said, somewhat hastily, that he was ready.

Neither his brief consideration, nor its purport, was lost on his companion. She eyed him narrowly, while he spoke; and cast upon him a look of intelligence which sufficiently showed that she guessed what had been passing in his thoughts.

"Hush!" said the girl, stooping over him, and pointing to the door as she looked cautiously round. "If ever you are to get loose from here, this is not the time. If I could help you, I would; but I have not the power. They don't mean to harin you; whatever they make you do, is no fault of yours. Give me your hand. Make haste! Your hand!"

She caught the hand which Oliver instinctively placed in hers, and, blowing out the light, drew him after her up the stairs. The door was opened, quickly, by some one shrouded in the darkness, and was as quickly closed, when they had passed out. A hackney-cabriolet was in waiting; the girl pulled him in with her, and drew the curtains close. The driver wanted no directions,

Oliver Twist

but lashed his horse into full speed, without the delay of an instant.

The girl still held Oliver fast by the hand, and continued to pour into his ear, the warnings and assurances she had already imparted. All was so quick and hurried, that he had scarcely time to recollect where he was, or how he came there, when the carriage stopped at the house to which the Jew's steps had been directed on the previous evening.

For one brief moment, Oliver cast a hurried glance along the empty street, and a cry for help hung upon his lips. But the girl's voice was in his ear, beseeching him in such tones of agony to remember her, that he had not the heart to utter it. While he hesitated, the opportunity was gone ; he was already in the house, and the door was shut.

" This way," said the girl. " Bill ! "

" Hallo ! " replied Sikes : appearing at the head of the stairs, with a candle. " Oh ! That's the time of day. Come on ! "

This was a very strong expression of approbation, an uncommonly hearty welcome, from a person of Mr. Sikes's temperament.

" Bull's-eye's gone home with Tom," observed Sikes, as he lighted them up. " He'd have been in the way."

" That's right," rejoined Nancy.

" So you've got the kid," said Sikes, when they had all reached the room : closing the door as he spoke.

" Yes, here he is," replied Nancy.

" Did he come quiet ? " inquired Sikes.

" Like a lamb," rejoined Nancy.

" I'm glad to hear it," said Sikes, looking grimly at Oliver ; " for the sake of his young carcase : as would otherways have suffered for it. Come here, young 'un ; and let me read you a lectur', which is as well got over at once."

Thus addressing his new pupil, Mr. Sikes pulled off Oliver's cap and threw it into a corner ; and then, taking him by the shoulder, sat himself down by the table, and stood the boy in front of him.

" Now, first : do you know wot this is ? " inquired Sikes, taking up a pocket-pistol which lay on the table.

Oliver Twist

Oliver replied in the affirmative.

“ It’s loaded,” said Mr. Sikes.

“ Yes, I see it is, sir,” replied Oliver.

“ Well,” said the robber, grasping Oliver’s wrist, and putting the barrel close to his temple, “ if you speak a word when you’re out o’ doors with me, except when I speak to you, that loading will be in your head without notice. So, if you *do* make up your mind to speak without leave, say your prayers first.”

Having bestowed a scowl upon the object of this warning, to increase its effect, Mr. Sikes continued :

“ As near as I know, there isn’t anybody as would be asking very partickler arter you, if you *was* disposed of ; so I needn’t take this trouble to explain matters to you, if it warn’t for your own good. And now let’s have some supper, and get a snooze before starting.”

In pursuance of this request, Nancy quickly laid the cloth ; disappearing for a few minutes, she presently returned with a pot of porter and a dish of sheep’s heads : which gave occasion to several pleasant witticisms on the part of Mr. Sikes, founded upon the singular coincidence of “ jemimies ” being a cant name, common to them, and also to an ingenious implement much used in his profession. Indeed, the worthy gentleman, stimulated perhaps by the immediate prospect of being on active service, was in great spirits and good humour.

Supper being ended—it may be easily conceived that Oliver had no great appetite for it—Mr. Sikes disposed of a couple of glasses of spirits and water, and threw himself on the bed ; ordering Nancy, with many imprecations in case of failure, to call him at five precisely. Oliver stretched himself in his clothes, by command of the same authority, on a mattress upon the floor ; and the girl, mending the fire, sat before it, in readiness to rouse them at the appointed time.

For a long time Oliver lay awake, thinking it not impossible that Nancy might seek that opportunity of whispering some further advice ; but the girl sat brooding over the fire, without moving, save now and then to trim the light. Weary with watching and anxiety, he at length fell asleep.

When he awoke, the table was covered with tea-

Oliver Twist

things, and Sikes was thrusting various articles into the pockets of his great-coat, which hung over the back of a chair. Nancy was busily engaged in preparing breakfast. It was not yet daylight ; for the candle was still burning, and it was quite dark outside. A sharp rain, too, was beating against the window-panes ; and the sky looked black and cloudy.

“ Now, then ! ” growled Sikes, as Oliver started up ; “ half-past five ! Look sharp, or you’ll get no breakfast ; for it’s late as it is.”

Oliver was not long in making his toilet ; having taken some breakfast, he replied to a surly inquiry from Sikes, by saying that he was quite ready.

Nancy, scarcely looking at the boy, threw him a handkerchief to tie round his throat ; Sikes gave him a large rough cape to button over his shoulders. Thus attired, he gave his hand to the robber, who, merely pausing to show him with a menacing gesture, that he had that same pistol in a side-pocket of his great-coat, clasped it firmly in his, and, exchanging a farewell with Nancy, led him away.

CHAPTER XVII

IT was a cheerless morning when they got into the street ; blowing and raining hard ; and the clouds looking dull and stormy. There was a faint glimmering of the coming day in the sky ; but it rather aggravated than relieved the gloom of the scene : the sombre light only serving to pale that which the street lamps afforded, without shedding any warmer or brighter tints upon the wet house-tops, and dreary streets.

By the time they had turned into the Bethnal Green Road, the day had fairly begun to break. Many of the lamps were already extinguished ; a few country waggons were slowly toiling on, towards London ; now and then, a stage-coach, covered with mud, rattled briskly by : the driver bestowing, as he passed, an admonitory lash upon the heavy waggoner who, by

Oliver Twist

keeping on the wrong side of the road, had endangered his arriving at the office, a quarter of a minute after his time. The public-houses, with gas-lights burning inside, were already open. By degrees, other shops began to be unclosed, and a few scattered people were met with. Then, came straggling groups of labourers going to their work; then, men and women with fish-baskets on their heads; donkey-carts laden with vegetables; chaise-carts filled with live-stock or whole carcasses of meat; milk-women with pails; an unbroken concourse of people, trudging out with various supplies to the eastern suburbs of the town. As they approached the City, the noise and traffic gradually increased; when they threaded the streets between Shoreditch and Smithfield, it had swelled into a roar of sound and bustle.

Turning down Sun Street and Crown Street, and crossing Finsbury Square, Mr. Sikes struck, by way of Chiswell Street, into Barbican: thence into Long Lane, and so into Smithfield; from which latter place arose a tumult of discordant sounds that filled Oliver Twist with amazement.

Mr. Sikes, dragging Oliver after him, elbowed his way through the crowd. He nodded, twice or thrice, to a passing friend; and, resisting as many invitations to take a morning dram, pressed steadily onward, until they were clear of the turmoil, and had made their way through Hollesier Lane into Holborn.

When they had passed Hyde Park Corner, and were on their way to Kensington, Sikes relaxed his pace, until an empty cart, which was at some little distance behind, came up. Seeing "Hounslow" written on it, he asked the driver, with as much civility as he could assume, if he would give them a lift as far as Isleworth.

"Jump up," said the man. "Is that your boy?"

"Yes; he's my boy," replied Sikes, looking hard at Oliver, and putting his hand abstractedly into the pocket where the pistol was.

"Your father walks rather too quick for you, don't he, my man?" inquired the driver: seeing that Oliver was out of breath.

"Not a bit of it," replied Sikes, interposing. "He's used to it. Here, take hold of my hand, Ned. In with you!"

Oliver Twist

Thus addressing Oliver, he helped him into the cart ; and the driver, pointing to a heap of sacks, told him to lie down there, and rest himself.

As they passed the different mile-stones, Oliver wondered, more and more, where his companion meant to take him. Kensington, Hammersmith, Chiswick, Kew Bridge, Brentford, were all passed ; and yet they went on as steadily as if they had only just begun their journey. At length, they came to a public-house called the Coach and Horses : a little way beyond which, another road appeared to turn off. And here, the cart stopped.

Sikes dismounted with great precipitation, holding Oliver by the hand all the while ; and lifting him down directly, bestowed a furious look upon him, and rapped the side-pocket with his fist, in a significant manner.

“ Good-bye, boy,” said the man.

“ He’s sulky,” replied Sikes, giving him a shake ; “ he’s sulky. A young dog ! Don’t mind him.”

“ Not I ! ” rejoined the other, getting into his cart. “ It’s a fine day, after all.” And he drove away.

Sikes waited until he had fairly gone ; and then, telling Oliver he might look about him if he wanted, once again led him onward on his journey.

They turned round to the left, a short way past the public-house ; and then, taking a right-hand road, walked on for a long time : passing many large gardens and gentlemen’s houses on both sides of the way, and stopping for nothing but a little beer, until they reached a town. Here against the wall of a house, Oliver saw written up in pretty large letters, “ Hampton.” They lingered about, in the fields, for some hours. At length, they came back into the town ; and, turning into an old public-house with a defaced sign-board, ordered some dinner by the kitchen fire.

They had some cold meat for dinner, and sat so long after it, while Mr. Sikes indulged himself with three or four pipes, that Oliver began to feel quite certain they were not going any farther. Being much tired with the walk, and getting up so early, he dozed a little at first ; then, quite overpowered by fatigue and the fumes of the tobacco, fell asleep.

It was quite dark when he was awakened by a push

Oliver Twist

from Sikes. Rousing himself sufficiently to sit up and look about him, he found that worthy in close fellowship and communication with a labouring man, over a pint of ale.

“ So you’re going on to Lower Halliford, are you ? ” inquired Sikes.

“ Yes, I am,” replied the man, who seemed a little the worse—or better, as the case might be—for drinking ; “ and not slow about it neither. My horse hasn’t got a load behind him going back, as he had coming up in the mornin’ ; and he won’t be long a-doing of it. Here’s luck to him ! Ecod ! he’s a good ‘un ! ”

“ Could you give my boy and me a lift as far as there ? ” demanded Sikes, pushing the ale towards his new friend.

“ If you’re going directly, I can,” replied the man, looking out of the pot. “ Are you going to Halliford ? ”

“ Going on to Shepperton,” replied Sikes.

“ I’m your man, as far as I go,” replied the other. “ Is all paid, Becky ? ”

“ Yes, the other gentleman’s paid,” replied the girl.

“ I say ! ” said the man, with tipsy gravity ; “ that won’t do, you know.”

“ Why not ? ” rejoined Sikes. “ You’re a-going to accommodate us, and wot’s to prevent my standing treat for a pint or so, in return ? ”

The stranger reflected upon this argument, with a very profound face ; having done so, he seized Sikes by the hand, and declared he was a real good fellow. To which Mr. Sikes replied, he was joking ; as, if he had been sober, there would have been strong reason to suppose he was.

After the exchange of a few more compliments, they bade the company good night, and went out. The horse, whose health had been drunk in his absence, was standing outside : ready harnessed to the cart. Oliver and Sikes got in without any further ceremony ; the man to whom he belonged, having lingered for a minute or two “ to bear him up,” mounted also ; and the horse started off at great speed.

The night was very dark. A damp mist rose from the river, and the marshy ground about ; and spread itself over the dreary fields. It was piercing cold, too ;

Oliver Twist

all was gloomy and black. Not a word was spoken ; for the driver had grown sleepy ; and Sikes was in no mood to lead him into conversation.

As they passed Sunbury Church, the clock struck seven. Two or three miles more, and the cart stopped. Sikes alighted, took Oliver by the hand, and they once again walked on.

They turned into no house at Shepperton, as the weary boy had expected ; but still kept walking on, in mud and darkness, until they came within sight of the lights of a town at no great distance. On looking intently forward, Oliver saw that the water was just below them, and that they were coming to the foot of a bridge.

Sikes kept straight on, until they were close upon the bridge ; then turned suddenly down a bank upon the left.

“ The water ! ” thought Oliver, turning sick with fear. “ He has brought me to this lonely place to murder me ! ”

He was about to throw himself on the ground, and make one struggle for his young life, when he saw that they stood before a solitary house : all ruinous and decayed. There was a window on each side of the dilapidated entrance ; and one story above ; but no light was visible. The house was dark, dismantled : and, to all appearance, uninhabited.

Sikes, with Oliver’s hand still in his, softly approached the low porch, and raised the latch. The door yielded to the pressure, and they passed in together.

CHAPTER XVIII

“ HALLO ! ” cried a loud, hoarse voice, as soon as they set foot in the passage.

“ Don’t make such a row,” said Sikes, bolting the door. “ Show a glim, Toby.”

“ Aha ! my pal ! ” cried the same voice. “ A glim, Barney, a glim ! Show the gentleman in, Barney ; wake up first, if convenient.”

The speaker appeared to throw a boot-jack, or some

Oliver Twist

such article, at the person he addressed, to rouse him from his slumbers: for the noise of a wooden body, falling violently, was heard; and then an indistinct muttering, as of a man between asleep and awake.

A pair of slipshod feet shuffled, hastily, across the bare floor of the room, and there issued, from a door on the right hand, a feeble candle, carried by an individual who laboured under the infirmity of speaking through his nose.

“Bister Sikes!” exclaimed Barney; “cub id, sir; cub id.”

“Here! you get on first,” said Sikes, putting Oliver in front of him. “Quicker! or I shall tread upon your heels.”

Muttering a curse upon his tardiness, Sikes pushed Oliver before him; and they entered a low dark room with a smoky fire, two or three broken chairs, a table, and a very old couch: on which, with his legs much higher than his head, a man was reposing at full length, smoking a long clay pipe. He was dressed in a smartly-cut snuff-coloured coat, with large brass buttons; an orange neckerchief; a coarse, staring, shawl-pattern waistcoat; and drab breeches. Mr. Crackit (for he it was) had no very great quantity of hair, either upon his head or face; but what he had, was of a reddish dye, and tortured into long corkscrew curls, through which he occasionally thrust some very dirty fingers, ornamented with large common rings.

“Bill, my boy!” said this figure, turning his head towards the door, “I am glad to see you. I was almost afraid you’d given it up: in which case I should have made a personal wentur. Hallo!”

Uttering this exclamation in a tone of great surprise, as his eye rested on Oliver, Mr. Toby Crackit brought himself into a sitting posture, and demanded who that was.

“The boy. Only the boy!” replied Sikes, drawing a chair towards the fire. “Now, if you’ll give us something to eat and drink while we’re waiting, you’ll put some heart in us; or in me, at all events. Sit down by the fire, younker, and rest yourself.”

Oliver looked at Sikes, in mute and timid wonder;

Oliver Twist

and drawing a stool to the fire, sat with his aching head upon his hands, scarcely knowing where he was, or what was passing around him.

"Here," said Toby, as the young Jew placed some fragments of food, and a bottle, upon the table. "Success to the crack!" He rose to honour the toast; and, carefully depositing his empty pipe in a corner, advanced to the table, filled a glass with spirits, and drank off its contents. Mr. Sikes did the same.

Sikes having satisfied his appetite (Oliver could eat nothing but a small crust of bread which they made him swallow), the two men laid themselves down on chairs for a short nap. Oliver retained his stool by the fire; Barney, wrapped in a blanket, stretched himself on the floor: close outside the fender.

They slept, or appeared to sleep, for some time; nobody stirring but Barney, who rose once or twice to throw coals upon the fire. Oliver fell into a heavy doze, when he was roused by Toby Crackit jumping up and declaring it was half-past one.

In an instant, the other two were on their legs, and all were actively engaged in busy preparation. Sikes and his companion enveloped their necks and chins in large dark shawls, and drew on their great-coats; Barney, opening a cupboard, brought forth several articles, which he hastily crammed into the pockets.

"Now then!" said Sikes, holding out his hand.

Oliver put his hand mechanically into that which Sikes extended for the purpose.

"Take his other hand, Toby," said Sikes. "Look out, Barney."

The man went to the door, and returned to announce that all was quiet. The two robbers issued forth with Oliver between them.

It was now intensely dark. They crossed the bridge, and kept on towards the lights which he had seen before. They were at no great distance off; and, as they walked pretty briskly, they soon arrived at Chertsey.

"Slap through the town," whispered Sikes; "there'll be nobody in the way, to-night, to see us."

Toby acquiesced; and they hurried through the main street of the little town, which at that late hour

Oliver Twist

was wholly deserted. A dim light shone at intervals from some bed-room window ; and the hoarse barking of dogs occasionally broke the silence of the night. But there was nobody abroad. They had cleared the town, as the church-bell struck two.

Quickenning their pace, they turned up a road upon the left hand. After walking about a quarter of a mile, they stopped before a detached house surrounded by a wall : to the top of which, Toby Crackit, scarcely pausing to take breath, climbed in a twinkling.

“The boy next,” said Toby. “Hoist him up ; I’ll catch hold of him.”

Before Oliver had time to look round, Sikes had caught him under the arms ; and in three or four seconds he and Toby were lying on the grass on the other side. Sikes followed directly. And they stole cautiously towards the house.

And now, for the first time, Oliver, well-nigh mad with grief and terror, saw that housebreaking and robbery, if not murder, were the objects of the expedition. He clasped his hands together, and involuntarily uttered a subdued exclamation of horror. A mist came before his eyes ; the cold sweat stood upon his ashy face ; his limbs failed him ; and he sank upon his knees.

“Get up !” murmured Sikes, trembling with rage, and drawing the pistol from his pocket. “Get up, or I’ll strew your brains upon the grass.”

“Oh ! for God’s sake let me go !” cried Oliver ; “let me run away and die in the fields. I will never come near London ; never, never ! Oh ! pray have mercy on me, and do not make me steal.”

The man to whom this appeal was made, swore a dreadful oath, and had cocked the pistol, when Toby, striking it from his grasp, placed his hand upon the boy’s mouth, and dragged him to the house.

“Hush !” cried the man ; “it won’t answer here. Say another word, and I’ll do your business myself with a crack on the head. That makes no noise, and is quite as certain, and more genteel. Here, Bill, wrench the shutter open. He’s game enough now, I’ll engage. I’ve seen older hands of his age took the same way, for a minute or two, on a cold night.”

Oliver Twist

Sikes plied the crowbar vigorously, but with little noise. After some delay, and some assistance from Toby, the shutter to which he had referred, swung open on its hinges.

It was a little lattice window, about five feet and a half above the ground, at the back of the house : which belonged to a scullery, or small brewing-place, at the end of the passage. The aperture was so small, that the inmates had probably not thought it worth while to defend it more securely ; but it was large enough to admit a boy of Oliver's size, nevertheless. A very brief exercise of Mr. Sikes's art, sufficed to overcome the fastening of the lattice ; and it soon stood wide open also.

"Now listen, you young limb," whispered Sikes, drawing a dark lantern from his pocket, and throwing the glare full on Oliver's face ; "I'm a-going to put you through there. Take this light ; go softly up the steps straight afore you, and along the little hall, to the street door ; unfasten it, and let us in."

"There's a bolt at the top, you won't be able to reach," interposed Toby. "Stand upon one of the hall chairs."

Although Mr. Crackit spoke in a scarcely audible whisper, Sikes imperiously commanded him to be silent, and to get to work. Toby complied, by first producing his lantern, and placing it on the ground ; then by planting himself firmly with his head against the wall beneath the window, and his hands upon his knees, so as to make a step of his back. This was no sooner done, than Sikes, mounting upon him, put Oliver gently through the window with his feet first ; and planted him safely on the floor inside.

"Take this lantern," said Sikes, looking into the room. "You see the stairs afore you ?"

Oliver, more dead than alive, gasped out, "Yes." Sikes, pointing to the street-door with the pistol-barrel, briefly advised him to take notice that he was within shot all the way ; and that if he faltered, he would fall dead that instant.

"It's done in a minute," said Sikes, in the same low whisper. "Directly I leave go of you, do your work. Hark ! "

Oliver Twist

“ What’s that ? ” whispered the other man.
They listened intently.

“ Nothing,” said Sikes, releasing his hold of Oliver.
“ Now ! ”

In the short time he had had to collect his senses, the boy had firmly resolved that, whether he died in the attempt or not, he would make one effort to dart upstairs from the hall, and alarm the family. Filled with this idea, he advanced at once, but stealthily.

“ Come back ! ” suddenly cried Sikes aloud. “ Back ! back ! ”

Scared by the sudden breaking of the dead stillness of the place, and by a loud cry which followed it, Oliver let his lantern fall, and knew not whether to advance or fly.

The cry was repeated—a light appeared—a vision of two terrified half-dressed men at the top of the stairs swam before his eyes—a flash—a loud noise—a smoke—a crash somewhere, but where he knew not—and he staggered back.

Sikes had disappeared for an instant ; but he was up again, and had him by the collar before the smoke had cleared away. He fired his own pistol after the men, who were already retreating ; and dragged the boy up.

“ Clasp your arm tighter,” said Sikes, as he drew him through the window. “ Give me a shawl here. They’ve hit him. Quick ! How the boy bleeds ! ”

Then came the loud ringing of a bell, mingled with the noise of fire-arms, and the shouts of men, and the sensation of being carried over uneven ground at a rapid pace. And then, the noises grew confused in the distance ; and a cold deadly feeling crept over the boy’s heart ; and he saw or heard no more.

CHAPTER XIX

THE night was bitter cold. The snow lay on the ground, frozen into a hard thick crust, so that only the heaps that had drifted into by-ways and corners were

Oliver Twist

affected by the sharp wind that howled abroad : which, as if expending increased fury on such prey as it found, caught it savagely up in clouds, and, whirling it into a thousand misty eddies, scattered it in air. Bleak, dark, and piercing cold, it was a night for the well-housed and fed to draw round the bright fire and thank God they were at home ; and for the homeless, starving wretch to lay him down and die.

Such was the aspect of out-of-doors affairs, when Mrs. Corney, the matron of the workhouse to which our readers have been already introduced as the birthplace of Oliver Twist, sat herself down before a cheerful fire in her own little room, and glanced, with no small degree of complacency, at a small round table : on which stood a tray of corresponding size, furnished with all necessary materials for the most grateful meal that matrons enjoy. In fact, Mrs. Corney was about to solace herself with a cup of tea.

“ Well ! ” said the matron, leaning her elbow on the table, and looking reflectively at the fire ; “ I’m sure we have all on us a great deal to be grateful for ! A great deal, if we did but know it. Ah ! ”

Mrs. Corney shook her head mournfully. The small teapot, and the single cup, had awakened in her mind sad recollections of Mr. Corney (who had not been dead more than five-and-twenty years) ; and she was over-powered.

“ I shall never get another ! ” said Mrs. Corney, pettishly ; “ I shall never get another—like him.”

She had just tasted her first cup, when she was disturbed by a soft tap at the room-door.

“ Oh, come in with you ! ” said Mrs. Corney, sharply. “ Don’t stand there, letting the cold air in, don’t. What’s amiss now, eh ? ”

“ Nothing, ma’am, nothing,” replied a man’s voice.

“ Dear me ! ” exclaimed the matron, in a much sweeter tone, “ is that Mr. Bumble ? ”

“ At your service, ma’am,” said Mr. Bumble, who had been stopping outside to rub his shoes clean, and to shake the snow off his coat ; and who now made his appearance, bearing his cocked-hat in one hand and a bundle in the other.

Oliver Twist

“ Hard weather, Mr. Bumble,” said the matron.

“ Hard, indeed, ma’am,” replied the beadle. “ Anti-porochial weather this, ma’am. We have given away, Mrs. Corney, we have given away a matter of twenty quarten loaves and a cheese and a half, this very blessed afternoon ; and yet them paupers are not contented.”

“ Of course not. When would they be, Mr. Bumble ? ” said the matron, sipping her tea.

“ When, indeed, ma’am ! ” rejoined Mr. Bumble. “ Why here’s one man that, in consideration of his wife and large family, has a quarten loaf and a good pound of cheese, full weight. Is he grateful, ma’am ? Is he grateful ? Not a copper farthing’s worth of it ! What does he do, ma’am, but ask for a few coals ; if it’s only a pocket handkerchief full, he says ! Coals ! What would he do with coals ? Toast his cheese with ‘em, and then come back for more. That’s the way with these people, ma’am ; give ‘em a apron full of coals to-day, and they’ll come back for another, the day after to-morrow, as brazen as alabaster.”

The matron expressed her entire concurrence in this intelligible simile.

“ But don’t you think out-of-door relief a very bad thing, any way, Mr. Bumble ? You’re a gentleman of experience, and ought to know. Come.”

“ Mrs. Corney,” said the beadle, smiling as men smile who are conscious of superior information, “ out-of-door relief, properly managed : properly managed, ma’am : is the porochial safeguard. The great principle of out-of-door relief is, to give the paupers exactly what they don’t want ; and then they get tired of coming.”

“ Dear me ! ” exclaimed Mrs. Corney. “ Well, that is a good one, too ! ”

“ Yes, that’s the rule now, Mrs. Corney, all over the country. But, however,” said the beadle, stopping to unpack his bundle, “ these are official secrets, ma’am ; not to be spoken of ; except, as I may say, among the porochial officers, such as ourselves.” He took two bottles from the bundle. “ This is the port wine, ma’am, that the board ordered for the infirmary ; real, fresh, genuine port wine ; only out of the cask this forenoon ; clear as a bell ; and no sediment ! ”

Oliver Twist

Having held the first bottle up to the light, and shaken it well to test its excellence, Mr. Bumble placed them both on the top of a chest of drawers ; folded the handkerchief in which they had been wrapped ; put it carefully in his pocket ; and took up his hat, as if to go.

“ You’ll have a very cold walk, Mr. Bumble,” said the matron.

“ It blows, ma’am,” replied Mr. Bumble, turning up his coat-collar, “ enough to cut one’s ears off.”

The matron looked from the little kettle to the beadle, who was moving towards the door ; and as the beadle coughed, preparatory to bidding her good night, bashfully inquired whether—whether he wouldn’t take a cup of tea ?

Mr. Bumble instantaneously turned back his collar again ; laid his hat and stick upon a chair ; and drew another chair up to the table. As he slowly seated himself, he looked at the lady. She fixed her eyes upon the little tea-pot. Mr. Bumble coughed again, and slightly smiled.

Mrs. Corney rose to get another cup and saucer from the closet. As she sat down, her eyes once again encountered those of the gallant beadle ; she coloured, and applied herself to the task of making his tea.

“ Sweet, Mr. Bumble ? ” inquired the matron, taking up the sugar-basin.

“ Very sweet, indeed, ma’am,” replied Mr. Bumble. He fixed his eyes on Mrs. Corney as he said this ; and if ever a beadle looked tender, Mr. Bumble was that beadle at that moment.

The tea was made, and handed in silence. Mr. Bumble, having spread a handkerchief over his knees to prevent the crumbs from sullying the splendour of his shorts, began to eat and drink.

“ You have a cat, ma’am, I see,” said Mr. Bumble, glancing at one who, in the centre of her family, was basking before the fire ; “ and kittens too, I declare ! ”

“ I am so fond of them, Mr. Bumble, you can’t think,” replied the matron. “ They’re *so* happy, *so* frolicsome, and *so* cheerful, that they are quite companions for me.”

“ Very nice animals, ma’am,” replied Mr. Bumble, approvingly ; “ *so* very domestic.”

Oliver Twist

"Oh, yes!" rejoined the matron with enthusiasm; "so fond of their home too, that it's quite a pleasure, I'm sure."

"Mrs. Corney, ma'am," said Mr. Bumble, slowly, and marking the time with his teaspoon, "I mean to say this, ma'am; that any eat, or kitten, that could live with you, ma'am, and *not* be fond of its home, must be a ass, ma'am."

"Oh, Mr. Bumble!" remonstrated Mrs. Corney.

"It's of no use disguising facts, ma'am," said Mr. Bumble, slowly flourishing the teaspoon; "I would drown it myself, with pleasure."

"Then you're a *cruel* man," said the matron vivaciously, as she held out her hand for the beadle's cup; "and a very hard-hearted man besides."

"Hard-hearted, Mrs. Corney?" said Mr. Bumble, stirring his tea, and looking up into the matron's face; "are *you* hard-hearted, Mrs. Corney?"

"Dear me!" exclaimed the matron, "what a very curious question from a single man! What can you want to know for, Mr. Bumble?"

The beadle drank his tea to the last drop; finished a piece of toast; whisked the crumbs off his knees; wiped his lips; and deliberately kissed the matron.

"Mr. Bumble!" cried that discreet lady in a whisper; for the fright was so great, that she had quite lost her voice, "Mr. Bumble, I shall scream!" Mr. Bumble made no reply; but, in a slow and dignified manner, put his arm round the matron's waist.

As the lady had stated her intention of screaming, of course she would have screamed at this additional boldness, but that the exertion was rendered unnecessary by a hasty knocking at the door: which was no sooner heard, than Mr. Bumble darted, with much agility, to the wine bottles, and began dusting them with great violence: while the matron sharply demanded who was there.

"If you please, mistress," said a withered old female pauper: putting her head in at the door, "old Sally is a-going fast."

"Well, what's that to me?" angrily demanded the matron. "I can't keep her alive, can I?"

Oliver Twist

"No, no, mistress," replied the old woman, "nobody can; she's far beyond the reach of help. But she says she has got something to tell, which you must hear. She'll never die quiet till you come, mistress."

At this intelligence, the worthy Mrs. Corney muttered a variety of invectives against old women who couldn't even die without purposely annoying their betters; and, muffling herself in a thick shawl which she hastily caught up, briefly requested Mr. Bumble to stay till she came back, lest anything particular should occur. Bidding the messenger walk fast, and not be all night hobbling up the stairs, she followed her from the room with a very ill grace, scolding all the way.

The old crone tottered along the passages, and up the stairs. Being at length compelled to pause for breath, she gave the light into her companion's hand, and remained behind to follow as she might: while the more rumbler superior made her way to the room where the sick woman lay.

It was a bare garret-room, with a dim light burning at the farther end. There was another old woman watching by the bed; the parish apothecary's apprentice was standing by the fire, making a toothpick out of a quill.

"Cold night, Mrs Corney," said this young gentleman, as the matron entered.

"Very cold, indeed, sir," replied the mistress, in her most civil tones, and dropping a curtsey as she spoke.

The conversation was interrupted by a moan from the sick woman.

"Oh!" said the young man, turning his face towards the bed, as if he had previously quite forgotten the patient, "it's all U. P. there, Mrs. Corney."

"It is, is it, sir?" asked the matron.

"If she lasts a couple of hours, I shall be surprised," said the apothecary's apprentice, intent upon the toothpick's point. "It's a break-up of the system altogether. Is she dozing, old lady?"

The attendant stooped over the bed, to ascertain; and nodded in the affirmative.

"Then perhaps she'll go off in that way, if you don't make a row," said the young man. "Put the light on the floor. She won't see it there."

Oliver Twist

The attendant did as she was told ; having done so, she resumed her seat by the side of the other nurse, who had by this time returned. The mistress, with an expression of impatience, wrapped herself in her shawl, and sat at the foot of the bed. The apothecary's apprentice wished Mrs. Corney joy of her job, and took himself off on tiptoe.

When they had sat in silence for some time, the two old women rose from the bed, and crouching over the fire, held out their withered hands to catch the heat.

The matron, who had been impatiently watching until the dying woman should awaken from her stupor, joined them by the fire, and sharply asked how long she was to wait.

“Not long, mistress,” replied the second woman, looking up into her face.

“Long or short,” said the matron, snappishly, “she won’t find me here when she does wake ; take care, both of you, how you worry me again for nothing. It’s no part of my duty to see all the old women in the house die, and I won’t—that’s more.”

She was bouncing away, when a cry from the two women, who had turned towards the bed, caused her to look round. The patient had raised herself upright, and was stretching her arms towards them.

“Who’s that ?” she cried, in a hollow voice.

“Hush, hush !” said one of the women, stooping over her. “Lie down, lie down !”

“I’ll never lie down again alive !” said the woman, struggling. “I *will* tell her ! Come here ! Nearer ! Let me whisper in your ear.”

She clutched the matron by the arm, and forcing her into a chair by the bedside, was about to speak, when looking round, she caught sight of the two old women bending forward in the attitude of eager listeners.

“Turn them away,” said the woman, drowsily ; “make haste ! make haste !”

The two old crones, chiming in together, began pouring out many piteous lamentations that the poor dear was too far gone to know her best friends, when the superior pushed them from the room, closed the door, and returned to the bedside.

Oliver Twist

"Now listen to me," said the dying woman aloud, as if making a great effort to revive one latent spark of energy. "In this very room—in this very bed—I once nursed a pretty young creetur', that was brought into the house with her feet cut and bruised with walking, and all soiled with dust and blood. She gave birth to a boy, and died. Let me think—what was the year again?"

"Never mind the year," said the impatient auditor; "what about her?"

"Ay," murmured the sick woman, relapsing into her former drowsy state, "what about her?—what about—I know!" she cried, jumping fiercely up: her face flushed, and her eyes starting from her head—"I robbed her, so I did! I stole it!"

"Stole what?" cried the matron.

"*It!*" replied the woman, laying her hand over the other's mouth. "The only thing she had. She wanted clothes to keep her warm, and food to eat; but she had kept it safe, and had it in her bosom. It was gold, I tell you! Rich gold, that might have saved her life!"

"Gold!" echoed the matron, bending eagerly over the woman as she fell back. "Go on, go on—yes—what of it? Who was the mother? When was it?"

"She charged me to keep it safe," replied the woman with a groan, "and trusted me as the only woman about her. I stole it in my heart when she first showed it me hanging round her neck. Poor girl! poor girl! She was so young, too! Such a gentle lamb! Wait; there's more to tell. I have not told you all, have I?"

"No, no," replied the matron, inclining her head to catch the words, as they came more faintly from the dying woman. "Be quick, or it may be too late!"

"The mother," said the woman, making a more violent effort than before; "the mother whispered in my ear that if her baby thrived, the day might come when it would not feel so much disgraced to hear its poor young mother named."

"The boy's name?" demanded the matron.

"They *culled* him Oliver," replied the woman, feebly. "The gold I stole was—"

"Yes, yes—what?" cried the other.

She was bending eagerly over the woman to hear her

Oliver Twist

reply ; but drew back, instinctively, as she once again rose, slowly and stiffly, into a sitting posture ; then, clutching the coverlid with both hands, muttered some indistinct sounds in her throat, and fell lifeless on the bed.

CHAPTER XX

WHILE these things were passing in the country workhouse, Mr. Fagin sat in the old den—the same from which Oliver had been removed by the girl—brooding over a dull, smoky fire. He held a pair of bellows upon his knee, with which he had apparently been endeavouring to rouse it into more cheerful action ; but he had fallen into deep thought ; and with his arms folded on them, and his chin resting on his thumbs, fixed his eyes, abstractedly, on the rusty bars.

At the table behind him sat the Artful Dodger, Master Charles Bates, and Mr. Chitting : all intent upon a game of whist. It being a cold night, the Dodger wore his hat, as, indeed, was often his custom within doors. He also sustained a clay pipe between his teeth, which he only removed for a brief space when he deemed it necessary to apply for refreshment to a quart pot upon the table, which stood ready filled with gin-and-water for the accommodation of the company.

“ Hark ! ” cried the Dodger presently, “ I heard the tinkler.” Catching up the light, he crept softly upstairs.

The bell was rung again, with some impatience, while the party were in darkness. After a short pause, the Dodger reappeared, and whispered Fagin mysteriously.

“ What ! ” cried the Jew, “ alone ? ”

The Dodger nodded in the affirmative.

The old man bit his yellow fingers, and meditated for some seconds ; his face working with agitation the while, as if he dreaded something, and feared to know the worst. At length he raised his head.

“ Where is he ? ” he asked.

The Dodger pointed to the floor above, and made a gesture, as if to leave the room.

Oliver Twist

"Yes," said the Jew, answering the mute inquiry ; "bring him down. Hush ! Quiet, Charley ! Gently, Tom ! Searee, searee ! "

This brief direction was softly and immediately obeyed. There was no sound of their whereabouts, when the Dodger descended the stairs, bearing the light in his hand, and followed by a man in a coarse smock-frock ; who, after casting a hurried glance round the room, pulled off a large wrapper which had concealed the lower portion of his face, and disclosed : all haggard, unwashed, and unshorn : the features of flash Toby Crackit.

"How are you, Faggy ?" said this worthy, nodding to the Jew. "Pop that shawl away in my easer, Dodger, so that I may know where to find it when I cut ; that's the time of day ! You'll be a fine young cracksman afore the old file now."

With these words he pulled up the smock-frock ; and, winding it round his middle, drew a chair to the fire, and placed his feet upon the hob.

"See there, Faggy," he said, pointing disconsolately to his top-boots ; "not a drop of Day and Martin since you know when ; not a bubble of blacking, by Jove ! But don't look at me in that way, man. All in good time. I can't talk about business till I've eat and drank ; so produce the sustenance, and let's have a quiet fill-out for the first time these three days ! "

The Jew motioned to the Dodger to place what eatables there were, upon the table ; and, seating himself opposite the housebreaker, waited his leisure. Toby continued to eat with the utmost outward indifference, until he could eat no more ; then, ordering the Dodger out, he closed the door, mixed a glass of spirits and water, and composed himself for talking.

"First and foremost, Faggy," said the housebreaker, "how's Bill ? "

"What !" screamed the Jew, starting from his seat.

"Why, you don't mean to say—" began Toby, turning pale.

"Mean !" cried the Jew, stamping furiously on the ground. "Where are they ? Sikes and the boy ! Where are they ? "

"The crack failed," said Toby, faintly.

Oliver Twist

"I know it," replied the Jew, tearing a newspaper from his pocket and pointing to it. "What more?"

"They fired and hit the boy. We cut over the fields at the back, with him between us—straight as the crow flies—through hedge and ditch. They gave chase. The whole country was awake, and the dogs upon us."

"The boy!"

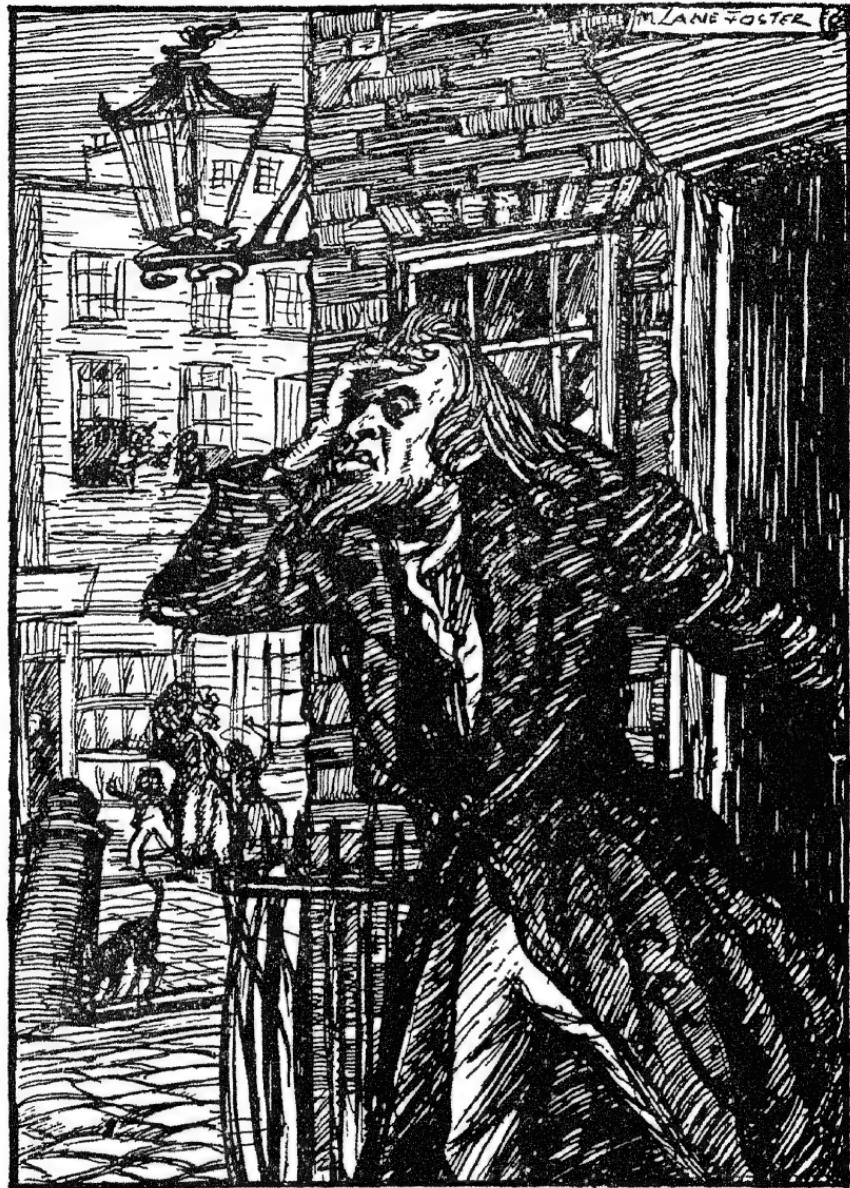
"Bill had him on his back, and scudded like the wind. We stopped to take him between us; his head hung down, and he was cold. They were close upon our heels; every man for himself, and each from the gallows! We parted company, and left the youngster lying in a ditch. Alive or dead, that's all I know about him."

The Jew stopped to hear no more; but uttering a loud yell, and twining his hands in his hair, rushed from the room, and from the house.

The old man had gained the street corner, before he began to recover the effect of Toby Crackit's intelligence. He had relaxed nothing of his unusual speed; but was still pressing onward, in the same wild and disordered manner, when the sudden dashing past of a carriage: and a boisterous cry from the foot passengers, who saw his danger: drove him back upon the pavement. Avoiding, as much as possible, all the main streets, and skulking only through the byways and alleys, he at length emerged on Snow Hill.

Near to the spot on which Snow Hill and Holborn Hill meet, there opens upon the right hand as you come out of the City, a narrow and dismal alley leading to Saffron Hill. In its filthy shops are exposed for sale huge bunches of second-hand silk handkerchiefs, of all sizes and patterns; for here reside the traders who purchase them from pickpockets. Hundreds of these handkerchiefs hang dangling from pegs outside the windows or flaunting from the door-posts; and the shelves, within, are piled with them.

It was into this place that the Jew turned. He was well known to the sallow denizens of Field Lane; for such of them as were on the look-out to buy or sell, nodded, familiarly, as he passed along. He replied to their salutations in the same way; but bestowed no closer recognition until he reached the farther end of



THE JEW STOPPED TO HEAR NO MORE. TWINING HIS HANDS IN HIS HAIR, HE RUSHED FROM THE ROOM, AND FROM THE HOUSE.

Oliver Twist

the alley ; when he stopped, to address a salesman of small stature, who had squeezed as much of his person into a child's chair as the chair would hold, and was smoking a pipe at his warehouse door.

" Why, the sight of you, Mr. Fagin, would cure the hoptalmy ! " said this respectable trader, in acknowledgment of the Jew's inquiry after his health.

" The neighbourhood was a little too hot, Lively, " said Fagin, elevating his eyebrows, and crossing his hands upon his shoulders.

" Well, I've heerd that complaint of it, once or twice before, " replied the trader ; " but it soon cools down again ; don't you find it so ? "

Fagin nodded in the affirmative. Pointing in the direction of Saffron Hill, he inquired whether any one was up yonder to-night.

" At the Cripples ? " inquired the man.

The Jew nodded.

" Let me see, " pursued the merchant, reflecting. " Yes, there's some half-dozen of 'em gone in, that I knows. I don't think your friend's there."

" Sikes is not, I suppose ? " inquired the Jew, with a disappointed countenance.

" *Non istwentus*, as the lawyers say, " replied the little man, shaking his head, and looking amazingly sly. " Have you got anything in my line to-night ? "

" Nothing to-night, " said the Jew, turning away.

The Three Cripples was a public-house familiarly known to its patrons as the Cripples. Merely making a sign to a man at the bar, Fagin walked straight upstairs, and opening the door of a room, and softly insinuating himself into the chamber, looked anxiously about : shading his eyes with his hand, as if in search of some particular person.

The place was so full of dense tobacco smoke, that at first it was scarcely possible to discern anything more. By degrees, however, as some of it cleared away through the open door, an assemblage of heads, as confused as the noises that greeted the ear, might be made out ; and as the eye grew more accustomed to the scene, the spectator gradually became aware of the presence of a numerous company, male and female, crowded round a

Oliver Twist

long table : at the upper end of which, sat a chairman with a hammer of office in his hand ; while a professional gentleman, with a bluish nose, and his face tied up for the benefit of a toothache, presided at a jingling piano in a remote corner.

Fagin looked eagerly from face to face, but apparently without meeting that of which he was in search. Succeeding, at length, in catching the eye of the man who occupied the chair, he beckoned to him slightly, and left the room, as quietly as he had entered it.

"What can I do for you, Mr. Fagin ?" inquired the man, as he followed him out to the landing. "Won't you join us ? They'll be delighted, every one of 'm."

The Jew shook his head impatiently, and said in a whisper, "Is *he* here ?"

"No," replied the man.

"And no news of Barney ?" inquired Fagin.

"None," replied the landlord of the Cripples ; for it was he. "He won't stir till it's all safe."

"Will *he* be here to-night ?" asked the Jew, laying the same emphasis on the pronoun as before.

"Monks, do you mean ?" inquired the landlord, hesitating.

"Hush !" said the Jew. "Yes."

"Certain," replied the man, drawing a gold watch from his fob ; "I expected him here before now. If you'll wait ten minutes, he'll be—"

"No, no," said the Jew, hastily ; as though, however desirous he might be to see the person in question, he was nevertheless relieved by his absence. "Tell him I came here to see him ; and that he must come to me to-night. No, say to-morrow. As he is not here, to-morrow will be time enough."

"Good !" said the man. "Nothing more ?"

"Not a word now," said the Jew, descending the stairs.

The landlord returned to his guests, and the Jew turned his face homeward. The weather being dark, and piercing cold, he had no great temptation to loiter. The sharp wind that scoured the streets, seemed to have cleared them of passengers, as of dust and mud, for few

Oliver Twist

people were abroad, and they were to all appearance hastening fast home.

He had reached the corner of his own street, and was already fumbling in his pocket for the door-key, when a dark figure emerged from a projecting entrance which lay in deep shadow, and, crossing the road, glided up to him unperceived.

“Fagin !” whispered a voice close to his ear.

“Ah !” said the Jew, turning quickly round, “is that—”

“Yes !” interrupted the stranger. “Where have you been ?”

“On your business, my dear,” replied the Jew, glancing uneasily at his companion, and slackening his pace as he spoke.

“Oh, of course !” said the stranger, with a sneer. “Well ; and what’s come of it ?”

“Nothing good,” said the Jew.

“Nothing bad, I hope ?” said the stranger, stopping short, and turning a startled look on his companion.

The Jew shook his head, and was about to reply, when the stranger, interrupting him, motioned to the house, before which they had by this time arrived : remarking, that he had better say what he had got to say under cover.

Fagin looked as if he could have willingly excused himself from taking home a visitor, and, indeed, muttered something about having no fire ; but his companion repeating his request in a peremptory manner, he unlocked the door, and requested him to close it softly, while he got a light.

“It’s as dark as the grave,” said the man, groping forward a few steps. “Make haste !”

“Shut the door,” whispered Fagin from the end of the passage. As he spoke, it closed with a loud noise.

“That wasn’t my doing,” said the other man, feeling his way. “The wind blew it to, or it shut of its own accord : one or the other. Look sharp with the light, or I shall knock my brains out against something in this confounded hole.”

Fagin stealthily descended the kitchen stairs. After a short absence, he returned with a lighted candle, and

Oliver Twist

the intelligence that Toby Crackit was asleep in the back room below, and that the boys were in the front one. Beckoning the man to follow him, he led the way upstairs.

They conversed for some time in whispers. Though nothing of the conversation was distinguishable beyond a few disjointed words here and there, a listener might easily have perceived that Fagin appeared to be defending himself against some remarks of the stranger; and that the latter was in a state of considerable irritation. They might have been talking, thus, for a quarter of an hour or more, when Monks—by which name the Jew had designated the strange man several times in the course of their colloquy—said, raising his voice a little—

“I tell you again, it was badly planned. Why not have kept him here among the rest, and made a sneaking, snivelling pickpocket of him at once?”

“Only hear him!” exclaimed the Jew, shrugging his shoulders.

“Why, do you mean to say you couldn’t have done it, if you had chosen?” demanded Monks, sternly. “Haven’t you done it, with other boys, scores of times? If you had had patience for a twelvemonth, at most, couldn’t you have got him convicted, and sent safely out of the kingdom; perhaps for life?”

“Whose turn would that have served, my dear?” inquired the Jew, humbly.

“Mine,” replied Monks.

“But not mine,” said the Jew, submissively. “He might have become of use to me. When there are two parties to a bargain, it is only reasonable that the interests of both should be consulted; is it, my good friend?”

“What then?” demanded Monks.

“I saw it was not easy to train him to the business,” replied the Jew; “he was not like other boys in the same circumstances. I had no hold upon him to make him worse. His hand was not in. What could I do? Send him out with the Dodger and Charley? We had enough of that, at first, my dear; I trembled for us all.”

“That was not my doing,” observed Monks.

“No, no, my dear!” renewed the Jew. “And I

Oliver Twist

don't quarrel with it now; because, if it had never happened, you might never have clapped eyes upon the boy to notice him, and so led to the discovery that it was him you were looking for. Well! I got him back for you by means of the girl; and then *she* begins to favour him. I know what these girls are. As soon as the boy begins to harden, she'll care no more for him, than for a block of wood. You want him made a thief. If he is alive, I can make him one from this time; and if—if—" said the Jew, drawing nearer to the other,— "it's not likely, mind,—but if the worst comes to the worst, and he is dead—"

"It's no fault of mine if he is!" interposed the other man, with a look of terror, and clasping the Jew's arm with trembling hands. "Mind that, Fagin! I had no hand in it. Anything but his death, I told you from the first. What's that?"

"What!" cried the Jew, grasping the coward round the body, with both arms, as he sprung to his feet. "Where?"

"Yonder!" replied the man, glaring at the opposite wall. "The shadow! I saw the shadow of a woman, in a cloak and bonnet, pass along the wainscot like a breath!"

The Jew released his hold, and they rushed tumultuously from the room. The candle showed them only the empty staircase, and their own white faces. They listened intently: a profound silence reigned throughout the house.

"It's your fancy," said the Jew, taking up the light and turning to his companion.

"I'll swear I saw it!" replied Monks, trembling. "It was bending forward when I saw it first; and when I spoke, it darted away."

The Jew glanced contemptuously at the pale face of his associate, and, telling him he could follow, if he pleased, ascended the stairs. They looked into all the rooms; they were cold, bare, and empty. They descended into the passage, and thence into the cellars below. The green damp hung upon the low walls; the tracks of the snail and slug glistened in the light of the candle; but all was still as death.

Oliver Twist

"What do you think now?" said the Jew, when they had regained the passage. "Besides ourselves, there's not a creature in the house except Toby and the boys; and they're safe enough. See here!"

As a proof of the fact, the Jew drew forth two keys from his pocket; and explained, that when he first went downstairs, he had locked them in, to prevent any intrusion on the conference.

This accumulated testimony effectually staggered Mr. Monks. His protestations had gradually become less and less vehement as they proceeded in their search without making any discovery; and, now, he gave vent to several very grim laughs, and confessed it could only have been his excited imagination. He declined any renewal of the conversation, however, for that night: suddenly remembering that it was past one o'clock. And so the amiable couple parted.

CHAPTER XXI

MR. BUMBLE had re-counted the tea-spoons, re-weighed the sugar-tongs, made a closer inspection of the milk-pot, and ascertained to a nicety the exact condition of the furniture, down to the very horse-hair seats of the chairs, when Mrs. Corney, hurrying into the room, threw herself, in a breathless state, on a chair by the fireside, and covering her eyes with one hand, placed the other over her heart, and gasped for breath.

"Mrs. Corney," said Mr. Bumble, stooping over the matron, "what is this, ma'am? Has anything happened, ma'am?"

"Oh, Mr. Bumble!" cried the lady, "I have been so dreadfully put out!"

"Put out, ma'am!" exclaimed Mr. Bumble; "who has dared to—?"

"It's dreadful to think of!" said the lady, shuddering.

"Then *don't* think of it, ma'am," rejoined Mr. Bumble.

"I can't help it," whimpered the lady.

Oliver Twist

"Then take something, ma'am," said Mr. Bumble, soothingly. "A little of the wine?"

"Not for the world!" replied Mrs. Corney. "I couldn't,—oh! The top shelf in the right-hand corner—oh!" Uttering these words, the good lady pointed, distractedly, to the cupboard, and underwent a convulsion from internal spasms. Mr. Bumble rushed to the closet; and, snatching a pint green-glass bottle from the shelf thus incoherently indicated, filled a tea-cup with its contents, and held it to the lady's lips.

"I'm better now," said Mrs. Corney, falling back, after drinking half of it.

Mr. Bumble raised his eyes piously to the ceiling in thankfulness; and, bringing them down again to the brim of the cup, lifted it to his nose.

"Peppermint," exclaimed Mrs. Corney, in a faint voice, smiling gently on the beadle as she spoke. "Try it! There's a little—a little something else in it."

Mr. Bumble tasted the medicine with a doubtful look; smacked his lips; took another taste; and put the cup down empty.

"It's very comforting," said Mrs. Corney.

"Very much so indeed, ma'am," said the beadle. As he spoke, he drew a chair beside the matron, and tenderly inquired what had happened to distress her.

"Nothing," replied Mrs. Corney. "I am a foolish, excitable, weak creetur."

"We are all weak creeturs," said Mr. Bumble.

Mrs. Corney sighed.

"Don't sigh, Mrs. Corney," said Mr. Bumble.

"I can't help it," said Mrs. Corney. And she sighed again.

"This is a very comfortable room, ma'am," said Mr. Bumble, looking round. "Another room, and this, ma'am, would be a complete thing."

"It would be too much for one," murmured the lady.

"But not for two, ma'am," rejoined Mr. Bumble, in soft accents. "The board allow you coals, don't they, Mrs. Corney?"

"And candles," replied Mrs. Corney.

"Coals, candles, and house-rent free," said Mr. Bumble. "Oh, Mrs. Corney, what a Angel you are!"

Oliver Twist

The lady was not proof against this burst of feeling: she sank into Mr. Bumble's arms.

"Such porochial perfection!" exclaimed Mr. Bumble, rapturously. "You know that Mr. Slout is worse to-night, my fascinator?"

"Yes," replied Mrs. Corney, bashfully.

"He can't live a week, the doctor says," pursued Mr. Bumble. "He is the master of this establishment; his death will cause a wacancy; that wacancy must be filled up. Oh, Mrs. Corney, what a prospect this opens! What a opportunity for a joining of hearts and house-keepings!"

Mrs. Corney sobbed.

"The little word?" said Mr. Bumble, bending over the bashful beauty. "The one little, little, little word, my blessed Corney?"

"Ye—ye—yes!" sighed out the matron.

"One more," pursued the beadle; "compose your darling feelings for only one more. When is it to come off?"

Mrs. Corney twice essayed to speak; and twice failed. At length summoning up courage, she threw her arms round Mr. Bumble's neck, and said, it might be as soon as ever he pleased, and that he was "a irresistible duck."

Matters being thus amicably and satisfactorily arranged, the contract was solemnly ratified in another teacupful of the peppermint mixture; which was rendered the more necessary, by the flutter and agitation of the lady's spirits. While it was being disposed of, she acquainted Mr. Bumble with the old woman's decease.

"Very good," said that gentleman, sipping his peppermint; "I'll call at Sowerberry's as I go home, and tell him to send to-morrow morning."

Mr. Bumble turned up his coat-collar, and put on his cocked-hat; and, having exchanged a long and affectionate embrace with his future partner, once again braved the cold wind of the night: merely pausing, for a few minutes, in the male paupers' ward, to abuse them a little, with the view of satisfying himself that he could fill the office of workhouse-master with needful acerbity. Assured of his qualifications, Mr. Bumble left the building with a light heart, and bright visions of his future promotion.

Oliver Twist

CHAPTER XXII

"WOLVES tear your throats!" muttered Sikes, grinding his teeth. "I wish I was among some of you; you'd howl the hoarser for it."

As Sikes growled forth this imprecation, with the most desperate ferocity that his desperate nature was capable of, he rested the body of the wounded boy across his bended knee; and turned his head, for an instant, to look back at his pursuers.

There was little to be made out, in the mist and darkness; but the loud shouting of men vibrated through the air, and the barking of the neighbouring dogs, roused by the sound of the alarm bell, resounded in every direction.

"Stop!" cried the robber, shouting after Toby Crackit, who, making the best use of his long legs, was already ahead. "Bear a hand with the boy."

Toby made a show of returning; but ventured, in a low voice, broken for want of breath, to intimate considerable reluctance as he came slowly along.

"Quicker!" cried Sikes, laying the boy in a dry ditch at his feet, and drawing a pistol from his pocket. "Don't play booty with me."

At this moment the noise grew louder. Sikes, again looking round, could discern that the men who had given chase were already climbing the gate of the field in which he stood; and that a couple of dogs were some paces in advance of them.

"It's all up, Bill!" cried Toby; "drop the kid, and show 'em your heels." With this parting advice, Mr. Crackit fairly turned tail, and darted off at full speed. Sikes clenched his teeth; took one look around; threw over the prostrate form of Oliver the cape in which he had been hurriedly muffled; ran along the front of the hedge, as if to distract the attention of those behind, from the spot where the boy lay; paused, for a second, before another hedge which met it at right angles; and whirling his pistol high into the air, cleared it at a bound, and was gone.

Oliver Twist

"Ho, ho, there!" cried a tremulous voice in the rear. "Pincher! Neptune! Come here, come here!"

The dogs, who, in common with their masters, seemed to have no particular relish for the sport in which they were engaged, readily answered to the command. Three men, who had by this time advanced some distance into the field, stopped to take counsel together.

"My advice, or, leastways, I should say, my *orders*, is," said the fattest man of the party, "that we 'meditately go home again."

"I am agreeable to anything which is agreeable to Mr. Giles," said a shorter man; who was by no means of a slim figure, and who was very pale in the face, and very polite: as frightened men frequently are.

"I shouldn't wish to appear ill-mannered, gentlemen," said the third, who had called the dogs back, "Mr. Giles ought to know."

"Certainly," replied the shorter man; "and whatever Mr. Giles says, it isn't our place to contradict him. No, no, I know my sitiuation! Thank my stars, I know my sitiuation." To tell the truth, the little man *did* seem to know his situation, and to know perfectly well that it was by no means a desirable one; for his teeth chattered in his head as he spoke.

"You are afraid, Brittles," said Mr. Giles.

"I a'n't," said Brittles.

"You are," said Giles.

"You're a falschold, Mr. Giles," said Brittles.

"You're a lie, Brittles," said Mr. Giles.

The third man brought the dispute to a close, most philosophically.

"I'll tell you what it is, gentlemen," said he, "we're all afraid."

"Speak for yourself, sir," said Mr. Giles, who was the palest of the party.

"So I do," replied the man. "It's natural and proper to be afraid under such circumstances. *I am.*"

"So am I," said Brittles; "only there's no call to tell a man he is, so bounceably."

These frank admissions softened Mr. Giles, who at once owned that *he* was afraid; upon which, they all

Oliver Twist

three faced about, and ran back again with the completest unanimity.

This dialogue was held between the two men who had surprised the burglars, and a travelling tinker who had been sleeping in an outhouse, and who had been roused, together with his two mongrel curs, to join in the pursuit. Mr. Giles acted in the double capacity of butler and steward to the old lady of the mansion ; Brittles was a lad of all work : who, having entered her service a mere child, was treated as a promising young boy still, though he was something past thirty.

The air grew colder, as day came slowly on ; and the mist rolled along the ground like a dense cloud of smoke. The grass was wet ; the pathways and low places were all mire and water ; the damp breath of an unwholesome wind went languidly by, with a hollow moaning. Still, Oliver lay motionless and insensible on the spot where Sikes had left him.

Morning drew on apace. The air became more sharp and piercing, as its first dull hue glimmered faintly in the sky. The rain came down, thick and fast, and pattered noisily among the leafless bushes. But, Oliver felt it not, as it beat against him ; for he still lay stretched, helpless and unconscious, on his bed of clay.

At length, a low cry of pain broke the stillness that prevailed ; and uttering it, the boy awoke. His left arm, rudely bandaged in a shawl, hung heavy and useless at his side : the bandage was saturated with blood. He was so weak, that he could scarcely raise himself into a sitting posture ; when he had done so, he looked feebly round for help, and groaned with pain. Trembling in every joint, from cold and exhaustion, he made an effort to stand upright ; but, shuddering from head to foot, fell prostrate on the ground.

After a short return of the stupor in which he had been so long plunged, Oliver : urged by a creeping sickness at his heart, which seemed to warn him that if he lay there, he must surely die : got upon his feet, and essayed to walk. His head was dizzy, and he staggered to and fro like a drunken man. But he kept up, nevertheless, and, with his head drooping languidly on his breast, went stumbling onward until he reached a road.

Oliver Twist

Here the rain began to fall so heavily, that it roused him.

He looked about, and saw that at no great distance there was a house, which perhaps he could reach. He summoned up all his strength for one last trial, and bent his faltering steps towards it.

As he drew nearer to this house, a feeling came over him that he had seen it before. He remembered nothing of its details ; but the shape and aspect of the building seemed familiar to him.

That garden wall ! On the grass inside, he had fallen on his knees last night, and prayed the two men's mercy. It was the very house they had attempted to rob.

Oliver felt such fear come over him when he recognised the place, that, for the instant, he forgot the agony of his wound, and thought only of flight. Flight ! He could scarcely stand : and if he were in full possession of all the best powers of his slight and youthful frame, whither could he fly ? He pushed against the garden-gate ; it was unlocked, and swung open on its hinges. He tottered across the lawn ; climbed the steps ; knocked faintly at the door ; and, his whole strength failing him, sunk down against one of the pillars of the little portico.

It happened that about this time, Mr. Giles, Brittles, and the tinker, were recruiting themselves, after the fatigues and terrors of the night, with tea and sundries, in the kitchen. Mr. Giles sat with his legs stretched out before the fender, leaning his left arm on the table, while, with his right, he illustrated a circumstantial and minute account of the robbery, to which his hearers (but especially the cook and housemaid, who were of the party) listened with breathless interest.

" It was about half-past two," said Mr. Giles, " or I wouldn't swear that it mightn't have been a little nearer three, when I woke up, and, turning round in my bed, as it might be so (here Mr. Giles turned round in his chair and pulled the corner of the table-cloth over him to imitate bed-clothes), I fancied I heerd a noise."

At this point of the narrative the cook turned pale, and asked the housemaid to shut the door : who asked Brittles, who asked the tinker, who pretended not to hear.

Oliver Twist

“—Heerd a noise,” continued Mr. Giles. “I says, at first, ‘This is illusion;’ and was composing myself off to sleep, when I heerd the noise again, distinct.”

“What sort of a noise?” asked the cook.

“A kind of a bursting noise,” replied Mr. Giles, looking round him.

“More like the noise of powdering a iron bar on a nutmeg-grater,” suggested Brittles.

“It was, when *you* heerd it, sir,” rejoined Mr. Giles; “but, at this time, it had a bursting sound. I turned down the clothes;” continued Giles, rolling back the table-cloth, “sat up in bed; and listened.”

The cook and housemaid simultaneously ejaculated “Lor!” and drew their chairs closer together.

“I heerd it now, quite apparent,” resumed Mr. Giles. “‘Somebody,’ I says, ‘is forcing of a door, or window; what’s to be done? I’ll call up that poor lad, Brittles, and save him from being murdered in his bed; or his throat,’ I says, ‘may be cut from his right ear to his left, without his ever knowing it.’”

Here, all eyes were turned upon Brittles, who fixed his upon the speaker, and stared at him, with his mouth wide open, and his face expressive of the most unmitigated horror.

“I tossed off the clothes,” said Giles, throwing away the table-cloth, and looking very hard at the cook and housemaid, “got softly out of bed; drew on a pair of shoes, seized the loaded pistol that always goes upstairs with the plate-basket; and walked on tiptoes to his room. ‘Brittles,’ I says, when I had woke him, ‘don’t be frightened!’”

“So you did,” observed Brittles, in a low voice.

“‘We’re dead men, I think, Brittles,’ I says,” continued Giles; “‘but don’t be frightened.’”

“Was he frightened?” asked the cook.

“Not a bit of it,” replied Mr. Giles. “He was as firm—ah! pretty near as firm as I was.”

“I should have died at once, I’m sure, if it had been me,” observed the housemaid.

“You’re a woman,” retorted Brittles, plucking up a little.

“Brittles is right,” said Mr. Giles, nodding his head,

Oliver Twist

approvingly ; “ from a woman, nothing else was to be expected. We, being men, took a dark lantern that was standing on Brittles’s hob, and groped our way downstairs in the pitch dark,—as it might be so.”

Mr. Giles had risen from his seat, and taken two steps with his eyes shut, to accompany his description with appropriate action, when he started violently, in common with the rest of the company, and hurried back to his chair. The cook and housemaid screamed.

“ It was a knock,” said Mr. Giles, assuming perfect serenity. “ Open the door, somebody.”

Nobody moved.

“ It seems a strange sort of thing, a knock coming at such a time in the morning,” said Mr. Giles, surveying the pale faces which surrounded him, and looking very blank himself ; “ but the door must be opened. Do you hear, somebody ? ”

Mr. Giles, as he spoke, looked at Brittles ; but that young man, being naturally modest, probably considered himself nobody, and so held that the inquiry could not have any application to him : at all events, he tendered no reply. Mr. Giles directed an appealing glance at the tinker ; but he had suddenly fallen asleep. The women were out of the question.

“ If Brittles would rather open the door, in the presence of witnesses,” said Mr. Giles, after a short silence, “ I am ready to make one.”

“ So am I,” said the tinker, waking up, as suddenly as he had fallen asleep.

Brittles capitulated on these terms ; and the party being somewhat re-assured by the discovery (made on throwing open the shutters) that it was now broad day, took their way upstairs ; with the dogs in front. The two women, who were afraid to stay below, brought up the rear. By the advice of Mr. Giles, they all talked very loud, to warn any evil-disposed person outside, that they were strong in numbers ; and by a master-stroke of policy, originating in the brain of the same ingenious gentleman, the dogs’ tails were well pinched, in the hall, to make them bark savagely.

These precautions having been taken, Mr. Giles held on fast by the tinker’s arm (to prevent his running away,

Oliver Twist

as he pleasantly said), and gave the word of command to open the door. Brittles obeyed ; the group, peeping timorously over each other's shoulders, beheld no more formidable object than poor little Oliver Twist, speechless and exhausted, who raised his heavy eyes, and mutely solicited their compassion.

“A boy !” exclaimed Mr. Giles, valiantly pushing the tinker into the background. “What's the matter with the—eh ?—Why—Brittles—look here—don't you know ?”

Brittles, who had got behind the door to open it, no sooner saw Oliver, than he uttered a loud cry. Mr. Giles, seizing the boy by one leg and one arm (fortunately not the broken limb), luggered him strait' into the hall, and deposited him at full length on the floor thereof.

The two women-servants ran upstairs to carry the intelligence that Mr. Giles had captured a robber ; and the tinker busied himself in endeavouring to restore Oliver, lest he should die before he could be hanged. In the midst of all this noise and commotion, there was heard a sweet voice, which quelled it in an instant.

“Giles !” whispered the voice from the stair-head.

“I'm here, miss,” replied Mr. Giles. “Don't be frightened, miss ; I ain't much injured.”

“Hush !” replied the young lady ; “you frighten my aunt as much as the thieves did. Is the poor creature much hurt ?”

“Wounded desperate, miss,” replied Giles, with indescribable complacency.

“He looks as if he was a-going, miss,” bawled Brittles, in the same manner as before. “Wouldn't you like to come and look at him, miss, in case he should ?”

“Hush, pray ; there's a good man !” rejoined the lady. “Wait quietly only one instant, while I speak to Aunt.”

With a footstep as soft and gentle as the voice, the speaker tripped away. She soon returned, with the direction that the wounded person was to be carried, carefully, upstairs to Mr. Giles's room ; and that Brittles was to saddle the pony and betake himself instantly to Chertsey : from which place, he was to despatch, with all speed, a constable and doctor.

Oliver Twist

CHAPTER XXIII

IN a handsome room : though its furniture had rather the air of old-fashioned comfort, than of modern elegance : there sat two ladies at a well-spread breakfast-table. Mr. Giles, dressed with scrupulous care in a full suit of black, was in attendance upon them.

Of the two ladies, one was well advanced in years ; but the high-backed oaken chair in which she sat, was not more upright than she. The younger lady was not past seventeen. She was busily engaged in the little offices of the table.

“And Brittles has been gone upwards of an hour, has he ? ” asked the old lady.

“An hour and twelve minutes, ma’am,” replied Mr. Giles, referring to a silver watch, which he drew forth by a black ribbon.

“He is always slow,” remarked the old lady.

“Brittles always was a slow boy, ma’am,” replied the attendant. And seeing, by-the-by, that Brittles had been a slow boy for upwards of thirty years, there appeared no great probability of his ever being a fast one.

“He gets worse instead of better, I think,” said the elder lady.

“It is very inexcusable in him if he stops to play with any other boys,” said the young lady, smiling.

Mr. Giles was apparently considering the propriety of indulging in a respectful smile himself, when a gig drove up to the garden gate : out of which there jumped a fat gentleman, who ran straight up to the door : and who, getting quickly into the house by some mysterious process, burst into the room, and nearly overturned Mr. Giles and the breakfast-table together.

“I never heard of such a thing ! ” exclaimed the fat gentleman. “My dear Mrs. Maylie—bless my soul—in the silence of night, too—I *never* heard of such a thing ! ”

With these expressions of condolence, the fat gentleman shook hands with both ladies, and drawing up a chair, inquired how they found themselves.

Oliver Twist

" You ought to be dead ; positively dead with the fright," said the fat gentleman. " Why didn't you send ? Bless me, my man should have come in a minute ; and so would I. Dear, dear ! So unexpected ! In the silence of night, too ! "

The doctor seemed especially troubled by the fact of the robbery having been unexpected, and attempted in the night-time ; as if it were the established custom of gentlemen in the housebreaking way to transact business at noon, and to make an appointment, by post, a day or two previous.

" And you, Miss Rose," said the doctor, turning to the young lady, " I—"

" Oh ! very much so, indeed," said Rose, interrupting him ; " but there is a poor creature upstairs, whom Aunt wishes you to see."

" Ah ! to be sure," replied the doctor, " so there is. Where is he ? Show me the way. I'll look in again, as I come down, Mrs. Maylie. That's the little window that he got in at, eh ? Well, I couldn't have believed it ! "

Talking all the way, he followed Mr. Giles upstairs ; and while he is going upstairs, the reader may be informed, that Mr. Losberne, a surgeon in the neighbourhood, known through a circuit of ten miles round as " the doctor," had grown fat, more from good-humour than from good living : and was as kind and hearty, and withal as eccentric an old bachelor, as will be found in five times that space, by any explorer alive.

The doctor was absent, much longer than either he or the ladies had anticipated. A large flat box was fetched out of the gig ; and a bedroom bell was rung very often ; and the servants ran up and down stairs perpetually ; from which tokens it was justly concluded that something important was going on above. At length he returned ; and in reply to an anxious inquiry after his patient, looked very mysterious, and closed the door, carefully.

" This is a very extraordinary thing, Mrs. Maylie," said the doctor, standing with his back to the door, as if to keep it shut.

" He is not in danger, I hope ? " said the old lady.

Oliver Twist

“ Why, that would *not* be an extraordinary thing, under the circumstances,” replied the doctor; “ though I don’t think he is. Have you seen this thief ? ”

“ No,” rejoined the old lady.

“ Nor heard anything about him ? ”

“ No.”

“ I beg your pardon, ma’am,” interposed Mr. Giles; “ but I was going to tell you about him when Dr. Losberne came in.”

“ Rose wished to see the man,” said Mrs. Maylie, “ but I wouldn’t hear of it.”

“ Humph ! ” rejoined the doctor. “ There is nothing very alarming in his appearance. Have you any objection to see him in my presence ? ”

“ If it be necessary,” replied the old lady, “ certainly not.”

“ Then I think it is necessary,” said the doctor; “ at all events, I am quite sure that you would deeply regret not having done so, if you postponed it. He is perfectly quiet and comfortable now. Allow me—Miss Rose, will you permit me ? Not the slightest fear, I pledge you my honour ! ”

CHAPTER XXIV

With many loquacious assurances that they would be agreeably surprised in the aspect of the criminal, the doctor drew the young lady’s arm through one of his; and offering his disengaged hand to Mrs. Maylie, led them, with much ceremony and stateliness, upstairs.

“ Now,” said the doctor, in a whisper, as he softly turned the handle of a bedroom door, “ let us hear what you think of him. He has not been shaved very recently, but he don’t look at all ferocious notwithstanding. Stop, though ! Let me first see that he is in visiting order.”

Stepping before them, he looked into the room. Motioning them to advance, he closed the door when they had entered; and gently drew back the curtains of the bed. Upon it, in lieu of the dogged, black-visaged

Oliver Twist

russian they had expected to behold, there lay a mere child : worn with pain and exhaustion, and sunk into a deep sleep. His wounded arm, bound and splintered up, was crossed upon his breast ; his head reclined upon the other arm, which was half hidden by his long hair, as it streamed over the pillow.

“ What can this mean ? ” exclaimed the elder lady. “ This poor child can never have been the pupil of robbers ! ”

“ Vice,” sighed the surgeon, replacing the curtain, “ takes up her abode in many temples ; and who can say that a fair outside shall not enshrine her ? ”

“ But, can you really believe that this delicate boy has been the voluntary associate of the worst outcasts of society ? ” said Rose.

The surgeon shook his head, in a manner which intimated that he feared it was very possible ; and observing that they might disturb the patient, led the way into an adjoining apartment.

“ But even if he has been wicked,” pursued Rose, “ think how young he is ; think that he may never have known a mother’s love, or the comfort of a home ; that ill-usage and blows, or the want of bread, may have driven him to herd with men who have forced him to guilt. Aunt, dear Aunt, think of this, before you let them drag this sick child to a prison, which in any case must be the grave of all his chances of amendment.”

“ My dear love,” said the elder lady, “ do you think I would harm a hair of his head ? ”

“ Oh no ! ” replied Rose, eagerly.

“ No, surely,” said the old lady ; “ my days are drawing to their close ; and may mercy be shown to me as I show it to others ! What can I do to save him, sir ? ”

“ Let me think, ma’am,” said the doctor ; “ let me think.”

Mr. Losberne thrust his hands into his pockets, and took several turns up and down the room ; often stopping, and balancing himself on his toes, and frowning frightfully. After various exclamations of “ I’ve got it now ” and “ no, I haven’t,” and as many renewals of the walking and frowning, he at length made a dead halt, and spoke as follows :



"MY DEAR LOVE," SAID THE ELDER LADY, "DO YOU THINK I WOULD
HARM A HAIR OF HIS HEAD?"

Oliver Twist

“ I think if you give me a full and unlimited commission to bully Giles, and that little boy, Brittles, I can manage it. Giles is a faithful fellow and an old servant, I know ; but you can make it up to him in a thousand ways, and reward him for being such a good shot besides. You don’t object to that ? ”

“ Unless there is some other way of preserving the child,” replied Mrs. Maylie.

“ There is no other,” said the doctor. “ No other, take my word for it.”

“ Then my aunt invests you with full power,” said Rose.

Hour after hour passed on, and still Oliver slumbered heavily. It was evening before the kind-hearted doctor brought the intelligence, that he was at length sufficiently restored to be spoken to. The boy was very ill, he said, and weak from the loss of blood ; but his mind was so troubled with anxiety to disclose something, that he deemed it better to give him the opportunity, than to insist upon his remaining quiet until next morning : which he should otherwise have done.

The conference was a long one. Oliver told them all his simple history, and was often compelled to stop, by pain and want of strength. It was a solemn thing, to hear, in the darkened room, the feeble voice of the sick child recounting a weary catalogue of evils and calamities which hard men had brought upon him.

The momentous interview was no sooner concluded, and Oliver composed to rest again, than the doctor betook himself downstairs to open upon Mr. Giles. And finding nobody about the parlours, it occurred to him, that he could perhaps originate the proceedings with better effect in the kitchen ; so into the kitchen he went.

There were assembled, in that lower house of the domestic parliament, the women-servants, Mr. Brittles, Mr. Giles, the tinker, and the constable.

The adventures of the previous night were still under discussion ; for Mr. Giles was expatiating upon his presence of mind, when the doctor entered ; Mr. Brittles, with a mug of ale in his hand, was corroborating everything, before his superior said it.

“ Sit still ! ” said the doctor, waving his hand.

“ How is the patient to-night, sir ? ” asked Giles.

Oliver Twist

"So-so ;" returned the doctor. "I am afraid you have got yourself into a scrape there, Mr. Giles."

"I hope you don't mean to say, sir," said Mr. Giles, trembling, "that he's going to die."

"That's not the point," said the doctor, mysteriously. "Are you going to take upon yourselves to swear, that that boy upstairs is the boy that was put through the little window last night ?"

The doctor, who was universally considered one of the best-tempered creatures on earth, made this demand in such a tone of anger, that Giles and Brittles, who were considerably muddled by ale and excitement, stared at each other in a state of stupefaction.

"Pay attention to the reply, constable, will you ?" said the doctor, shaking his forefinger with great solemnity of manner, and tapping the bridge of his nose with it, to bespeak the exercise of that worthy's utmost acuteness. "Something may come of this before long."

The constable looked as wise as he could, and took up his staff of office : which had been reclining insolently in the chimney-corner.

"I ask you again," thundered the doctor, "are you, on your solemn oaths, able to identify that boy ?"

Brittles looked doubtfully at Mr. Giles ; Mr. Giles looked doubtfully at Brittles ; the constable put his hand behind his ear, to catch the reply ; the two women and the tinker leaned forward to listen ; the doctor glanced keenly round ; when a ring was heard at the gate, and at the same moment, the sound of wheels.

"It's the runners ! " cried Brittles, to all appearance much relieved.

"The what ! " exclaimed the doctor, aghast in his turn.

"The Bow Street officers, sir," replied Brittles, taking up a candle ; "me and Mr. Giles sent for 'em this morning."

"What ?" cried the doctor.

"Yes," replied Brittles ; "I sent a message up by the coachman, and I only wonder they weren't here before, sir."

"You did, did you ? Then confound your—slow coaches down here ; that's all," said the doctor, walking away.

Oliver Twist

CHAPTER XXV

“Who’s that?” inquired Brittles, opening the door a little way, with the chain up, and peeping out, shading the candle with his hand.

“Open the door,” replied a man outside; “it’s the officers from Bow Street, as was sent to, to-day.”

Much comforted by this assurance, Brittles opened the door to its full width, and confronted a portly man in a great-coat; who walked in, without saying anything more, and wiped his shoes on the mat, as coolly as if he lived there.

“Just send somebody out to relieve my mate, will you, young man?” said the officer; “he’s in the gig, a-minding the prod. Have you got a coach ‘us here, that you could put it up in, for five or ten minutes?”

Brittles replying in the affirmative, and pointing out the building, the portly man stepped back to the garden-gate, and helped his companion to put up the gig: while Brittles lighted them, in a state of great admiration. This done, they returned to the house.

“Tell your governor that Blathers and Duff is here, will you?” said the stout man, smoothing down his hair, and laying a pair of handcuffs on the table. “Oh! Good evening, master. Can I have a word or two with you in private, if you please?”

This was addressed to Mr. Losberne, who now made his appearance; that gentleman, motioning Brittles to retire, brought in the two ladies, and shut the door.

“This is the lady of the house,” said Mr. Losberne, motioning towards Mrs. Maylie.

Mr. Blathers made a bow. Being desired to sit down, he put his hat on the floor, and taking a chair, motioned Duff to do the same.

“Now, with regard to this here robbery, master,” said Blathers. “What are the circumstances?”

Mr. Losberne, who appeared desirous of gaining time, recounted them at great length, and with much circumlocution. Messrs. Blathers and Duff looked very knowing meanwhile, and occasionally exchanged a nod.

Oliver Twist

"I can't say, for certain, till I see the work, of course," said Blathers; "but my opinion at once is,—I don't mind committing myself to that extent,—that this wasn't done by a yokel; eh, Duff?"

"Certainly not," replied Duff.

"Now, what is this, about this here boy that the servants are a-talking on?" said Blathers.

"Nothing at all," replied the doctor. "One of the frightened servants chose to take it into his head, that he had something to do with this attempt to break into the house; but it's nonsense: sheer absurdity."

"Very easy disposed of, if it is," remarked Duff.

"What he says is quite correct," observed Blathers, nodding his head in a confirmatory way, and playing carelessly with the handcuffs, as if they were a pair of castanets. "Who is the boy? What account does he give of himself? Where did he come from? He didn't drop out of the clouds, did he, master?"

"Of course not," replied the doctor, with a nervous glance at the two ladies. "I know his whole history: but we can talk about that presently. You would like, first, to see the place where the thieves made their attempt, I suppose?"

"Certainly," rejoined Mr. Blathers. "We had better inspect the premises first, and examine the servants afterwards. That's the usual way of doing business."

Lights were then procured; and Messrs. Blathers and Duff, attended by the native constable, Brittles, Giles, and everybody else in short, went into the little room at the end of the passage and looked out at the window; and afterwards went round by way of the lawn, and looked in at the window; and after that, had a candle handed out to inspect the shutter with; and after that, a lantern to trace the footsteps with; and after that, a pitchfork to poke the bushes with. This done, amidst the breathless interest of all beholders, they came in again; and Mr. Giles and Brittles were put through a melodramatic representation of their share in the previous night's adventures: which they performed some six times over; contradicting each other, in not more than one important respect, the first time, and in not more than a dozen the last.

Oliver Twist

Meanwhile, the doctor walked up and down the next room in a very uneasy state; and Mrs. Maylie and Rose looked on, with anxious faces.

"The more I think of it," said the doctor, "the more I see that it will occasion endless trouble and difficulty if we put these men in possession of the boy's real story. I am certain it will not be believed; and even if they can do nothing to him in the end, still the dragging it forward, and giving publicity to all the doubts that will be cast upon it, must interfere, materially, with your benevolent plan of rescuing him from misery. The boy has strong symptoms of fever upon him, and is in no condition to be talked to any more; that's one comfort. Come in!"

"Well, master," said Blathers, entering the room followed by his colleague, and making the door fast, before he said any more. "This warn't a put-up thing."

"And what's a put-up thing?" demanded the doctor, impatiently.

"We call it a put-up robbery, ladies," said Blathers, turning to them, as if he pitied their ignorance, but had a contempt for the doctor's, "when the servants is in it."

"Nobody suspected them, in this case," said Mrs. Maylie.

"Wery likely not, ma'am," replied Blathers; "but they might have been in it, for all that."

"More likely on that wery account," said Duff.

"We find it was a town hand," said Blathers, continuing his report; "for the style of work is first-rate. There was two of 'em in it, and they had a boy with 'em; that's plain from the size of the window. That's all to be said at present. We'll see this lad that you've got upstairs at once, if you please."

Oliver had been dozing; but looked worse, and was more feverish than he had appeared yet. Being assisted by the doctor, he managed to sit up in bed for a minute or so; and looked at the strangers without at all understanding what was going forward—in fact, without seeming to recollect where he was, or what had been passing.

"This," said Mr. Losberne, speaking softly, but with great vehemence notwithstanding, "this is the lad, who,

Oliver Twist

being accidentally wounded by a spring-gun in some boyish trespass on Mr. What-d'ye-call-him's grounds, at the back here, comes to the house for assistance this morning, and is immediately laid hold of and maltreated, by that ingenious gentleman with the candle in his hand, who has placed his life in considerable danger, as I can professionally certify."

Messrs. Blathers and Duff looked at Mr. Giles, as he was thus recommended to their notice. The bewildered butler gazed from them towards Oliver, and from Oliver towards Mr. Losberne, with a most ludicrous mixture of fear and perplexity.

"You don't mean to deny that, I suppose?" said the doctor, laying Oliver gently down again.

"It was all done for the—for the best, sir!" answered Giles. "I am sure I thought it was the boy, or I wouldn't have meddled with him."

"Well? Do you think so now?" inquired Blathers.

"I don't know; I really don't know," said Giles, with a rueful countenance. "I couldn't swear to him."

"What do you think?" asked Mr. Blathers.

"I don't know what to think," replied poor Giles. "I don't think it is the boy; indeed, I'm almost certain that it isn't. You know it can't be."

"Has this man been a-drinking, sir?" inquired Blathers, turning to the doctor.

Mr. Losberne had been feeling the patient's pulse during this short dialogue; but he now rose from the chair by the bedside, and remarked, that if the officers had any doubts upon the subject, they would perhaps like to step into the next room, and have Brittles before them.

Acting upon this suggestion, they adjourned to a neighbouring apartment, where Mr. Brittles, being called in, involved himself and his respected superior in such a wonderful maze of fresh contradictions and impossibilities, as tended to throw no particular light on anything, but the fact of his own strong mystification; except, indeed, his declarations that he shouldn't know the real boy, if he were put before him that instant; that he had only taken Oliver to be he, because Mr. Giles had said he was.

Oliver Twist

Among other ingenious surmises, the question was then raised, whether Mr. Giles had really hit anybody; and upon examination of the fellow pistol to that which he had fired, it turned out to have no more destructive loading than gunpowder and brown paper: a discovery which made a considerable impression on everybody but the doctor, who had drawn the ball about ten minutes before. Finally, the officers, without troubling themselves very much about Oliver, left the Chertsey constable in the house, and took up their rest for that night in the town.

The next morning, after some more examination, and a great deal more conversation, a neighbouring magistrate was readily induced to take the joint bail of Mrs. Maylie and Mr. Losberne for Oliver's appearance if he should ever be called upon; and Blathers and Duff, being rewarded with a couple of guineas, returned to town.

CHAPTER XXVI

OLIVER's ailings were neither slight nor few. In addition to the pain and delay attendant on a broken limb, his exposure to the wet and cold had brought on fever and ague: which hung about him for many weeks, and reduced him sadly. But, at length, he began, by slow degrees, to get better, and to be able to say sometimes, in a few tearful words, how deeply he felt the goodness of the two sweet ladies, and how ardently he hoped that when he grew strong and well again, he could do something to show his gratitude.

“Poor fellow!” said Rose; “you shall have many opportunities of serving us, if you will. We are going into the country, and my aunt intends that you shall accompany us. The quiet place, the pure air, and all the pleasures and beauties of spring, will restore you in a few days. We will employ you in a hundred ways, when you can bear the trouble.”

“The trouble!” cried Oliver. “Oh! dear lady, if I could but work for you; if I could only give you pleasure

Oliver Twist

by watering your flowers, or watching your birds, or running up and down the whole day long, to make you happy ; what would I give to do it ! ”

“ You shall give nothing at all,” said Miss Maylie, smiling ; “ for, as I told you before, we shall employ you in a hundred ways. To think that my dear good aunt should have been the means of rescuing any one from such sad misery as you have described to us, would be an unspeakable pleasure to me ; but to know that the object of her goodness and compassion was sincerely grateful and attached, in consequence, would delight me, more than you can well imagine. Do you understand me ? ” she inquired, watching Oliver’s thoughtful face.

“ Oh yes, ma’am, yes ! ” replied Oliver, eagerly ; “ but I was thinking that I am ungrateful now.”

“ To whom ? ” inquired the young lady.

“ To the kind gentleman, and the dear old nurse, who took so much care of me before,” rejoined Oliver. “ If they knew how happy I am, they would be pleased, I am sure.”

“ I am sure they would,” rejoined Oliver’s benefactress ; “ and Mr. Losberne has already been kind enough to promise that when you are well enough to bear the journey, he will carry you to see them.”

“ Has he, ma’am ? ” cried Oliver, his face brightening with pleasure. “ I don’t know what I shall do for joy when I see their kind faces once again ! ”

In a short time Oliver was sufficiently recovered to undergo the fatigue of this expedition. One morning he and Mr. Losberne set out, accordingly, in a little carriage which belonged to Mrs. Maylie. As Oliver knew the name of the street in which Mr. Brownlow resided, they were enabled to drive straight thither. When the coach turned into it, his heart beat so violently, that he could scarcely draw his breath.

“ Now, my boy, which house is it ? ” inquired Mr. Losberne.

“ That ! That ! ” replied Oliver, pointing eagerly out of the window. “ The white house.”

Alas ! the white house was empty, and there was a bill in the window. “ To Let.”

“ Knock at the next door,” cried Mr. Losberne, taking

Oliver Twist

Oliver's arm in his. "What has become of Mr. Brownlow, who used to live in the adjoining house, do you know?"

The servant did not know; but would go and inquire. She presently returned, and said, that Mr. Brownlow had sold off his goods, and gone to the West Indies, six weeks before. Oliver clasped his hands, and sank feebly backward.

"Has his housekeeper gone, too?" inquired Mr. Losberne, after a moment's pause.

"Yes, sir," replied the servant. "The old gentleman, the housekeeper, and a gentleman who was a friend of Mr. Brownlow's, all went together."

This bitter disappointment caused Oliver much sorrow and grief, even in the midst of his happiness; for he had pleased himself, many times during his illness, with thinking of all that Mr. Brownlow and Mrs. Bedwin would say to him. The hope of eventually clearing himself with them, too, and explaining how he had been forced away, had buoyed him up, and sustained him, under many of his recent trials; and now, the idea that they should have gone so far, and carried with them the belief that he was an impostor and a robber—a belief which might remain uncontradicted to his dying day—was almost more than he could bear.

The circumstance occasioned no alteration, however, in the behaviour of his benefactors. After another fortnight, when the fine warm weather had fairly begun, and every tree and flower was putting forth its young leaves and rich blossoms, they made preparations for quitting the house at Chertsey, for some months. Sending the plate, which had so excited Fagin's cupidity, to the banker's; and leaving Giles and another servant in care of the house, they departed to a cottage at some distance in the country, and took Oliver with them.

It was a lovely spot to which they repaired. Oliver, whose days had been spent among squalid crowds, and in the midst of noise and brawling, seemed to enter on a new existence there. The days were peaceful and serene; the nights brought with them neither fear nor care; no languishing in a wretched prison, or associating with wretched men; nothing but pleasant and

Oliver Twist

happy thoughts. Every morning he went to a white-headed old gentleman, who lived near the little church : who taught him to read better, and to write : and who spoke so kindly, and took such pains, that Oliver could never try enough to please him. Then, he would walk with Mrs. Maylie and Rose, and hear them talk of books ; or perhaps sit near them, in some shady place, and listen while the young lady read : which he could have done, until it grew too dark to see the letters. Then, he had his own lesson for the next day to prepare ; and at this, he would work hard, in a little room which looked into the garden, till evening came slowly on, when the ladies would walk out again, and he with them.

When it became quite dark, and they returned home, the young lady would sit down to the piano, and play some pleasant air, or sing, in a low and gentle voice, some old song which it pleased her aunt to hear. There would be no candles lighted at such times as these ; and Oliver would sit by one of the windows, listening to the sweet music, in a perfect rapture.

CHAPTER XXVII

SPRING flew swiftly by, and summer came. Still, the same quiet life went on at the little cottage, and the same cheerful serenity prevailed among its inmates. Oliver had long since grown stout and healthy ; but health or sickness made no difference in his warm feelings to those about him.

One beautiful night, they had taken a longer walk than was customary with them : for the day had been unusually warm, and there was a brilliant moon, and a light wind had sprung up, which was unusually refreshing. Rose had been in high spirits, too, and they had walked on, in merry conversation, till they had far exceeded their ordinary bounds. Mrs. Maylie being fatigued, they returned more slowly home. The young lady, merely throwing off her simple bonnet, sat down to the piano as usual. After running abstractedly over

Oliver Twist

the keys for a few minutes, she fell into a low and very solemn air ; and as she played it, they heard a sound as if she were weeping.

“ Rose, my love ! ” cried Mrs. Maylie, rising hastily and bending over her. “ What is this ? In tears ! My dear child, what distresses you ? ”

“ Nothing, Aunt ; nothing, ” replied the young lady. “ I don’t know what it is ; I can’t describe it ; but I feel— ”

“ Not ill, my love ? ” interposed Mrs. Maylie.

“ No, no ! Oh, not ill ! ” replied Rose ; “ I shall be better presently. Close the window, pray ! ”

Oliver hastened to comply with her request. The young lady, making an effort to recover her cheerfulness, strove to play some livelier tune ; but her fingers dropped powerless on the keys. Covering her face with her hands, she sank upon a sofa, and gave vent to the tears which she was now unable to repress.

“ My child ! ” said the elderly lady, folding her arms about her, “ I never saw you so before. ”

“ I would not alarm you if I could avoid it, ” rejoined Rose ; “ but indeed I have tried very hard, and cannot help this. I fear I am ill, Aunt. ”

She was, indeed ; for, when candles were brought, they saw that in the very short time which had elapsed since their return home, the hue of her countenance had changed to a marble whiteness. Its expression had lost nothing of its beauty ; but it was changed ; and there was an anxious, haggard look about the gentle face, which it had never worn before. Another minute, and it was suffused with a crimson flush : and a heavy wildness came over the soft blue eye. Again this disappeared, like the shadow thrown by a passing cloud ; and she was once more deadly pale.

Oliver, who watched the old lady anxiously, observed that she was alarmed by these appearances ; and so, in truth, was he ; but seeing that she affected to make light of them, he endeavoured to do the same, and they so far succeeded, that when Rose was persuaded by her aunt to retire for the night, she was in better spirits ; and appeared even in better health ; assuring them that she felt certain she should rise in the morning, quite well.

Oliver Twist

But when morning came, Rose was in the first stage of a high and dangerous fever.

"We must be active, Oliver, and not give way to useless grief," said Mrs. Maylie, laying her finger on her lip, as she looked steadily into his face; "this letter must be sent, with all possible expedition, to Mr. Losberne. It must be carried to the market-town: which is not more than four miles off, by the footpath across the fields: and thence dispatched, by an express on horseback, straight to Chertsey. The people at the inn will undertake to do this; and I can trust to you to see it done, I know."

Oliver could make no reply, but looked his anxiety to be gone at once.

"Here is another letter," said Mrs. Maylie, pausing to reflect: "but whether to send it now, or wait until I see how Rose goes on, I scarcely know. I would not forward it, unless I feared the worst."

"Is it for Chertsey, too, ma'am?" inquired Oliver: impatient to execute his commission, and holding out his trembling hand for the letter.

"No," replied the old lady, giving it to him mechanically. Oliver glanced at it, and saw that it was directed to Harry Maylie, Esquire, at some great lord's house in the country; where, he could not make out.

"Shall it go, ma'am?" asked Oliver, looking up, impatiently.

"I think not," replied Mrs. Maylie, taking it back. "I will wait until to-morrow."

With these words, she gave Oliver her purse, and he started off, without more delay, at the greatest speed he could muster.

Swiftly he ran across the fields, and down the little lanes which sometimes divided them: now almost hidden by the high corn on either side, and now emerging on an open field, where the mowers and haymakers were busy at their work: nor did he stop once, save now and then, for a few seconds, to recover breath, until he came, in a great heat, and covered with dust, on the little market-place of the market-town.

Here he paused, and looked about for the inn. There were a white bank, and a red brewery, and a yellow

Oliver Twist

town-hall ; and in one corner there was a large house, with all the wood about it painted green : before which was the sign of "The George." To this he hastened, as soon as it caught his eye.

He spoke to a postboy who was dozing under the gateway ; and who, after hearing what he wanted, referred him to the ostler ; who, after hearing all he had to say, again referred him to the landlord ; who was leaning against a pump by the stable-door, picking his teeth with a silver toothpick.

This gentleman walked with much deliberation into the bar to make out the bill : which took a long time making out : and after it was ready, and paid, a horse had to be saddled, and a man to be dressed, which took up ten good minutes more. At length, all was ready ; and the little parcel having been handed up, with many injunctions and entreaties for its speedy delivery, the man set spurs to his horse, and rattling over the uneven paving of the market-place, was out of the town, and galloping along the turnpike-road, in a couple of minutes.

As it was something to feel certain that assistance was sent for, and that no time had been lost, Oliver hurried up the inn-yard, with a somewhat lighter heart. He was turning out of the gateway when he accidentally stumbled against a tall man wrapped in a cloak, who was at that moment coming out of the inn door.

"Hah !" cried the man, fixing his eyes on Oliver, and suddenly recoiling. "What's this ? "

"I beg your pardon, sir," said Oliver ; "I was in a great hurry to get home, and didn't see you were coming."

"Death !" muttered the man to himself, glaring at the boy with his large dark eyes. "Who would have thought it ! Grind him to ashes ! He'd start up from a stone coffin, to come in my way ! "

"I am sorry," stammered Oliver, confused by the strange man's wild look. "I hope I have not hurt you ! "

"Rot you !" murmured the man between his clenched teeth ; "if I had only had the courage to say the word, I might have been free of you in a night. What are you doing here ? "

The man shook his fist, as he uttered these words

Oliver Twist

incoherently. He advanced towards Oliver, as if with the intention of aiming a blow at him, but fell violently on the ground: writhing and foaming, in a fit.

Oliver gazed, for a moment, at the struggles of the madman (for such he supposed him to be); and then darted into the house for help. Having seen him safely carried into the hotel, he turned his face homewards, running as fast as he could, to make up for lost time.

Rose Maylie had rapidly grown worse; before midnight she was delirious. A medical practitioner, who resided on the spot, was in constant attendance upon her; and after first seeing the patient, he had taken Mrs. Maylie aside, and pronounced her disorder to be one of a most alarming nature. "In fact," he said, "it would be little short of a miracle, if she recovered."

How often did Oliver start from his bed that night, and stealing out, with noiseless footstep, to the staircase, listen for the slightest sound from the sick chamber! All the next day, and for hours after it had grown dark, he paced softly up and down the garden, raising his eyes every instant to the sick chamber, and shuddering to see the darkened window, looking as if death lay stretched inside. Late at night, Mr. Losberne arrived. "It is hard," said the good doctor, turning away as he spoke; "so young; so much beloved; but there is very little hope."

Another morning. The sun shone brightly: as brightly as if it looked upon no misery or care; and, with every leaf and flower in full bloom about her: with life, and health, and sounds and sights of joy, surrounding her on every side: the fair young creature lay, wasting fast. Oliver crept away to the old churchyard, and sitting down on one of the green mounds, wept, and prayed for her, in silence.

When he reached home Mrs. Maylie was sitting in the little parlour. Oliver's heart sank at sight of her; for she had never left the bedside of her niece; and he trembled to think what change could have driven her away. He learnt that she had fallen into a deep sleep, from which she would waken, either to recovery and life, or to bid them farewell, and die.

They sat, listening, and afraid to speak, for hours

Oliver Twist

The untasted meal was removed. With looks which showed that their thoughts were elsewhere, they watched the sun as he sank lower and lower, and, at length, cast over sky and earth those brilliant hues which herald his departure. Their quick ears caught the sound of an approaching footstep. They both involuntarily darted to the door, as Mr. Losberne entered.

"What of Rose?" cried the old lady. "Tell me at once! I can bear it; anything but suspense! Oh, tell me! in the name of Heaven!"

"You must compose yourself," said the doctor, supporting her. "Be calm, my dear ma'am, pray."

"Let me go, in God's name! My dear child! She is dead! She is dying!"

"No!" cried the doctor, passionately. "As He is good and merciful, she will live to bless us all, for years to come."

The lady fell upon her knees, and tried to fold her hands together; but the energy which had supported her so long, fled up to Heaven with her first thanksgiving; and she sank into the friendly arms which were extended to receive her.

CHAPTER XXVIII

It was almost too much happiness to bear. Oliver felt stunned and stupefied by the unexpected intelligence; he could not weep, or speak, or rest. He had scarcely the power of understanding anything that had passed, until, after a long ramble in the quiet evening air, a burst of tears came to his relief, and he seemed to awaken, all at once, to a full sense of the joyful change that had occurred, and the almost insupportable load of anguish which had been taken from his breast.

The night was fast closing in, when he returned homeward: laden with flowers which he had culled, with peculiar care, for the adornment of the sick chamber. As he walked briskly along the road, he heard behind him the noise of some vehicle, approaching at a furious

Oliver Twist

pace. Looking round, he saw that it was a post-chaise, driven at great speed ; and as the horses were galloping, and the road was narrow, he stood leaning against a gate until it should have passed him.

As it dashed on, Oliver caught a glimpse of a man in a white nightcap, whose face seemed familiar to him, although his view was so brief that he could not identify the person. In another second or two, the nightcap was thrust out of the chaise-window, and a stentorian voice bellowed to the driver to stop : which he did, as soon as he could pull up his horses. Then, the nightcap once again appeared : and the same voice called Oliver by his name.

“Here !” cried the voice. “Oliver, what’s the news ? Miss Rose ! Master O-li-ver !”

“Is it you, Giles ?” cried Oliver, running up to the chaise-door.

Giles popped out his nightcap again, preparatory to making some reply, when he was suddenly pulled back by a young gentleman who occupied the other corner of the chaise, and who eagerly demanded what was the news.

“In a word !” cried the gentleman. “Better or worse ?”

“Better—much better !” replied Oliver, hastily.

“Thank Heaven !” exclaimed the gentleman. “You are sure ?”

“Quite, sir,” replied Oliver. “The change took place only a few hours ago ; and Mr. Losberne says, that all danger is at an end.”

The gentleman said not another word, but, opening the chaise-door, leaped out.

“I think you had better go on to my mother’s in the chaise, Giles,” said he. “I would rather walk slowly on, so as to gain a little time before I see her. You can say I am coming.”

As they walked along, Oliver glanced from time to time with much interest and curiosity at the new-comer. He seemed about five-and-twenty years of age, and was of the middle height ; his countenance was frank and handsome ; and his demeanour easy and prepossessing. Notwithstanding the difference between youth and age, he bore so strong a likeness to the old lady, that Oliver

Oliver Twist

would have had no great difficulty in imagining their relationship, if he had not already spoken of her as his mother.

Mrs. Maylie was anxiously waiting to receive her son when he reached the cottage. The meeting did not take place without great emotion on both sides.

“Mother!” whispered the young man; “why did you not write before?”

“I did,” replied Mrs. Maylie; “but, on reflection, I determined to keep back the letter until I had heard Mr. Losberne’s opinion.”

“But why,” said the young man, “why run the chance of that occurring which so nearly happened? If Rose had—I cannot utter that word now—if this illness had terminated differently, how could you ever have forgiven yourself! How could I ever have known happiness again!”

“If that *had* been the case, Harry,” said Mrs. Maylie, “I fear your happiness would have been effectually blighted, and that your arrival here, a day sooner or a day later, would have been of very, very little import.”

“You will tell her I am here?” said Harry.

“Of course,” replied Mrs. Maylie.

“And say how anxious I have been, and how much I have suffered, and how I long to see her?”

“Yes,” said the old lady; “I will tell her all.” And pressing her son’s hand, affectionately, she hastened from the room.

Mr. Losberne and Oliver had remained at another end of the apartment while this hurried conversation was proceeding. The former now held out his hand to Harry Maylie; and hearty salutations were exchanged between them. The doctor then communicated, in reply to multifarious questions from his young friend, a precise account of his patient’s situation; which was quite consolatory and full of promise; and to the whole of which, Mr. Giles, who affected to be busy about the luggage, listened with greedy ears.

“Have you shot anything particular, lately, Giles?” inquired the doctor, when he had concluded.

“Nothing particular, sir,” replied Mr. Giles, colouring up to the eyes.

Oliver Twist

"Nor catching any thieves, nor identifying any house-breakers?" said the doctor.

"None at all, sir," replied Mr. Giles, with much gravity.

"Well," said the doctor, "I am sorry to hear it, because you do that sort of thing admirably. Pray, how is Brittles?"

"The boy is very well, sir," said Mr. Giles, recovering his usual tone of patronage; "and sends his respectful duty, sir."

"That's well," said the doctor.

The remainder of the evening passed cheerfully away; for the doctor was in high spirits; and however fatigued or thoughtful Harry Maylie might have been at first, he was not proof against the worthy gentleman's good humour, which displayed itself in a great variety of sallies and professional recollections, and an abundance of small jokes, which struck Oliver as being the drollest things he had ever heard, and caused him to laugh proportionately: to the evident satisfaction of the doctor, who laughed immoderately at himself, and made Harry laugh almost as heartily, by the very force of sympathy.

Oliver rose next morning, in better heart, and went about his usual early occupations, with more hope and pleasure than he had known for many days. The birds were once more hung out, to sing, in their old places; and the sweetest wild flowers that could be found, were once more gathered to gladden Rose with their beauty. The melancholy which had seemed to the sad eyes of the anxious boy to hang, for days past, over every object, beautiful as all were, was dispelled by magic. The dew seemed to sparkle more brightly on the green leaves; the air to rustle among them with a sweeter music; and the sky itself to look more blue and bright.

It is worthy of remark, and Oliver did not fail to note it at the time, that his morning expeditions were no longer made alone. Harry Maylie, after the very first morning when he met Oliver coming laden home, was seized with such a passion for flowers, and displayed such a taste in their arrangement, as left his young companion far behind. If Oliver were behindhand in these respects, however, he knew where the best were to be found; and

Oliver Twist

morning after morning they scoured the country together, and brought home the fairest that blossomed. The window of the young lady's chamber was opened now; for she loved to feel the rich summer air stream in, and revive her with its freshness; but there always stood in water, just inside the lattice, one particular little bunch, which was made up with great care, every morning.

Nor did Oliver's time hang heavy on his hands, although the young lady had not yet left her chamber, and there were no evening walks, save now and then, for a short distance, with Mrs. Maylie. He applied himself, with redoubled assiduity, to the instructions of the white-headed old gentleman, and laboured so hard that his quick progress surprised even himself.

CHAPTER XXIX

MR. BUMBLE sat in the workhouse parlour with his eyes moodily fixed on the cheerless grate, whence, as it was summer time, no brighter gleam proceeded, than the reflection of certain sickly rays of the sun, which were sent back from its cold and shining surface. A paper fly-cage dangled from the ceiling, to which he occasionally raised his eyes in gloomy thought; and, as the heedless insects hovered round the gaudy network, Mr. Bumble would heave a deep sigh, while a more gloomy shadow overspread his countenance. Mr. Bumble was meditating; it might be that the insects brought to mind some painful passage in his own past life.

Nor was Mr. Bumble's gloom the only thing calculated to awaken a pleasing melancholy in the bosom of a spectator. There were not wanting other appearances, and those closely connected with his own person, which announced that a great change had taken place in the position of his affairs. The laced coat, and the cocked-hat; where were they? He still wore knee-breeches, and dark cotton stockings on his nether limbs; but they were not *the* breeches. The coat was wide-skirted; and in that respect like *the* coat, but, oh, how different!

Oliver Twist

The mighty cocked-hat was replaced by a modest round one. Mr. Bumble was no longer a beadle.

Mr. Bumble had married Mrs. Corney, and was master of the workhouse. Another beadle had come into power. On him the cocked-hat, gold-laced coat, and staff, had all three descended.

"And to-morrow two months it was done!" said Mr. Bumble, with a sigh. "It seems a age."

Mr. Bumble might have meant that he had concentrated a whole existence of happiness into the short space of eight weeks; but the sigh—there was a vast deal of meaning in the sigh.

"I sold myself," said Mr. Bumble, pursuing the same train of reflection, "for six teaspoons, a pair of sugar-tongs, and a milk-pot; with a small quantity of second-hand furniture, and twenty pound in money. I went very reasonable. Cheap, dirt cheap!"

"Cheap!" cried a shrill voice in Mr. Bumble's ear: "you would have been dear at any price; and dear enough I paid for you!"

Mr. Bumble turned, and encountered the face of his interesting consort, who, imperfectly comprehending the few words she had overheard of his complaint, had hazarded the foregoing remark at a venture.

"Mrs. Bumble, ma'am!" said Mr. Bumble, with sentimental sternness.

"Well!" cried the lady.

"Have the goodness to look at me," said Mr. Bumble, fixing his eyes upon her. ("If she stands such a eye as that," said Mr. Bumble to himself, "she can stand anything.")

Whether an exceedingly small expansion of eye be sufficient to quell paupers, who, being lightly fed, are in no very high condition; or whether the late Mrs. Corney was particularly proof against eagle glances; are matters of opinion. The matter of fact, is, that the matron was in no way overpowered by Mr. Bumble's scowl, but, on the contrary, treated it with great disdain, and even raised a laugh thereat.

On hearing this most unexpected sound, Mr. Bumble looked first incredulous, and afterwards amazed. He then relapsed into his former state; nor did he rouse

Oliver Twist

himself until his attention was again awakened by the voice of his partner.

"Are you going to sit snoring there, all day?" inquired Mrs. Bumble.

"I am going to sit here, as long as I think proper, ma'am," rejoined Mr. Bumble; "and although I was *not* snoring, I shall snore, gape, sneeze, laugh, or cry, as the humour strikes me; such being my prerogative."

"*Your* prerogative!" sneered Mrs. Bumble, with ineffable contempt.

"I said the word, ma'am," said Mr. Bumble. "The prerogative of a man is to command."

"And what's the prerogative of a woman, in the name of Goodness?" cried the relict of Mr. Corney deceased.

"To obey, ma'am," thundered Mr. Bumble. "Your late unfortunate husband should have taught it you; and then, perhaps, he might have been alive now. I wish he was, poor man!"

Mrs. Bumble, seeing at a glance that the decisive moment had now arrived, and that a blow struck for the mastership on one side or other, must necessarily be final and conclusive, no sooner heard this allusion to the dead and gone, than she dropped into a chair, and with a loud scream that Mr. Bumble was a hard-hearted brute, fell into a paroxysm of tears.

But, tears were not the things to find their way to Mr. Bumble's soul; his heart was waterproof. He eyed his good lady with looks of great satisfaction, and begged, in an encouraging manner, that she should cry her hardest: the exercise being looked upon, by the faculty, as strongly conducive to health.

"It opens the lungs, washes the countenance, exercises the eyes, and softens down the temper," said Mr. Bumble
"So cry away."

As he discharged himself of this pleasantry, Mr. Bumble took his hat from a peg, and putting it on, rather rakishly, on one side, as a man might, who felt he had asserted his superiority in a becoming manner, thrust his hands into his pockets, and sauntered towards the door.

Now, Mrs. Corney that was, had tried the tears, because they were less troublesome than a manual assault; but she was quite prepared to make trial of the latter mode

Oliver Twist

of proceeding, as Mr. Bumble was not long in discovering.

The first proof he experienced of the fact, was conveyed in a hollow sound, immediately succeeded by the sudden flying off of his hat to the opposite end of the room. This preliminary proceeding laying bare his head, the expert lady, clasping him tightly round the throat with one hand, inflicted a shower of blows (dealt with singular vigour and dexterity) upon it with the other. This done, she created a little variety by scratching his face, and tearing his hair; and, having, by this time, inflicted as much punishment as she deemed necessary for the offence, she pushed him over a chair, which was luckily well situated for the purpose: and defied him to talk about his prerogative again, if he dared.

"Get up!" said Mrs. Bumble, in a voice of command. "And take yourself away from here, unless you want me to do something desperate."

Mr. Bumble rose with a very rueful countenance: wondering much what something desperate might be. Picking up his hat, he looked towards the door.

"Are you going?" demanded Mrs. Bumble.

"Certainly, my dear, certainly," rejoined Mr. Bumble, making a quicker motion towards the door. "I didn't intend to—I'm going, my dear! You are so very violent, that really I—"

At this instant, Mrs. Bumble stepped hastily forward to replace the carpet, which had been kicked up in the scuffle. Mr. Bumble immediately darted out of the room, without bestowing another thought on his unfinished sentence, and walked, distractedly, into the street.

He walked up one street, and down another, until exercise had abated the first passion of his grief; and then the revulsion of feeling made him thirsty. He passed a great many public-houses; but at length paused before one in a by-way, whose parlour, as he gathered from a hasty peep over the blinds, was deserted, save by one solitary customer. It began to rain, heavily, at the moment. This determined him. Mr. Bumble stepped in; and ordering something to drink, as he passed the

Oliver Twist

bar, entered the apartment into which he had looked from the street.

The man who was seated there, was tall and dark, and wore a large cloak. He eyed Bumble askance, as he entered, but scarcely deigned to nod his head in acknowledgment of his salutation.

Mr. Bumble had quite dignity enough for two : supposing even that the stranger had been more familiar : so he drank his gin-and-water in silence, and read the paper with great show of pomp and circumstance.

It so happened, however : as it will happen very often, when men fall into company under such circumstances : that Mr. Bumble felt, every now and then, a powerful inducement, which he could not resist, to steal a look at the stranger ; and that whenever he did so, he withdrew his eyes, in some confusion, to find that the stranger was at that moment stealing a look at him.

When they had encountered each other's glance several times in this way, the stranger, in a harsh, deep voice, broke silence.

"Were you looking for me," he said, "when you peered in at the window ? "

"Not that I am aware of, unless you're Mr.——" Here Mr. Bumble stopped short ; for he was curious to know the stranger's name, and thought, in his impatience, he might supply the blank.

"I see you were not," said the stranger ; an expression of quiet sarcasm playing about his mouth ; "or you would have known my name."

"I meant no harm, young man," observed Mr. Bumble, majestically.

"And have done none," said the stranger.

Another silence succeeded this short dialogue : which was again broken by the stranger.

"I have seen you before, I think ? " said he. "You were beadle here, once ; were you not ? "

"I was," said Mr. Bumble, in some surprise ; "porochial beadle."

"Just so," rejoined the other, nodding his head. "It was in that character I saw you. What are you now ? "

"Master of the workhouse," rejoined Mr. Bumble, slowly and impressively.

Oliver Twist

" You have the same eye to your own interest, that you always had, I doubt not ? " resumed the stranger, looking keenly into Mr. Bumble's eyes, as he raised them in astonishment at the question. " Don't scruple to answer freely, man. I know you pretty well, you see."

" I suppose, a married man," replied Mr. Bumble, " is not more averse to turning an honest penny when he can, than a single one. Porochial officers are not so well paid that they can afford to refuse any little extra fee, when it comes to them in a civil and proper manner."

The stranger smiled, and nodded his head again: as much as to say, he had not mistaken his man; then rang the bell.

" Fill this glass again," he said, handing Mr. Bumble's empty tumbler to the landlord. " Let it be strong and hot. You like it so, I suppose ? "

" Not too strong," replied Mr. Bumble, with a delicate cough.

" You understand what that means, landlord ! " said the stranger, drily.

The host smiled, disappeared, and shortly afterwards returned with a steaming jorum: of which, the first gulp brought the water into Mr. Bumble's eyes.

" Now listen to me," said the stranger, after closing the door and window. " I came down to this place, to-day, to find you out; and you walked into the very room I was sitting in, while you were uppermost in my mind. I want some information from you. I don't ask you to give it for nothing, slight as it is. Put up that, to begin with."

As he spoke, he pushed a couple of sovereigns across the table to his companion, carefully, as though unwilling that the chinking of money should be heard without. When Mr. Bumble had scrupulously examined the coins, to see that they were genuine, and had put them up, with much satisfaction, in his waistcoat-pocket, he went on :

" Carry your memory back—let me see—twelve years, last winter."

" It's a long time," said Mr. Bumble. " Very good. I've done it."

" The scene, the workhouse."

Oliver Twist

“ Good ! ”

“ And the time, night.”

“ Yes.”

“ A boy was born there.”

“ A many boys,” observed Mr. Bumble, shaking his head, despondingly.

“ I speak of one ; a meek-looking, pale-faced boy, who was apprenticed down here, to a coffin-maker, and who afterwards ran away to London, as it was supposed.”

“ Why, you mean Oliver ! Young Twist ! ” said Mr. Bumble ; “ I remember him, of course. There wasn’t a obstinater young rascal—”

“ It’s not of him I want to hear ; I’ve heard enough of him,” said the stranger. “ It’s of a woman that nursed his mother. Where is she ? ”

“ She died last winter,” rejoined Mr. Bumble.

The man looked fixedly at him when he had given this information, and although he did not withdraw his eyes for some time afterwards, his gaze gradually became vacant and abstracted, and he seemed lost in thought. At length he breathed more freely ; and withdrawing his eyes, observed that it was no great matter. With that he rose, as if to depart.

But Mr. Bumble was cunning enough ; and he at once saw that an opportunity was opened, for the lucrative disposal of some secret in the possession of his better half. He well remembered the night of old Sally’s death, which the occurrences of that day had given him good reason to recollect, as the occasion on which he had proposed to Mrs. Corney ; and although that lady had never confided to him the disclosure of which she had been the solitary witness, he had heard enough to know that it related to something that had occurred in the old woman’s attendance, as workhouse nurse, upon the young mother of Oliver Twist. Hastily calling this circumstance to mind, he informed the stranger, with an air of mystery, that one woman had been closeted with the old harridan shortly before she died ; and that she could, as he had reason to believe, throw some light on the subject of his inquiry.

“ How can I find her ? ” said the stranger, thrown off his guard.

Oliver Twist

“ Only through me,” rejoined Mr. Bumble.

“ When ? ” cried the stranger, hastily.

“ To-morrow,” rejoined Bumble.

“ At nine in the evening,” said the stranger, producing a scrap of paper, and writing down upon it an obscure address by the water-side, in characters that betrayed his agitation ; “ at nine in the evening, bring her to me there. I needn’t tell you to be secret. It’s your interest.”

With these words, he led the way to the door, after stopping to pay for the liquor that had been drunk. Shortly remarking that their roads were different, he departed, without more ceremony than an emphatic repetition of the hour of appointment for the following night.

On glancing at the address, the parochial functionary observed that it contained no name. The stranger had not gone far, so he made after him to ask it.

“ What do you want ? ” cried the man, turning quickly round, as Bumble touched him on the arm. “ Following me ? ”

“ Only to ask a question,” said the other, pointing to the scrap of paper. “ What name am I to ask for ? ”

“ Monks ! ” rejoined the man ; and strode, hastily, away.

CHAPTER XXX

It was a dull, close, overcast summer evening. The clouds, which had been threatening all day, spread out in a dense and sluggish mass of vapour, already yielded large drops of rain, and seemed to presage a violent thunder-storm, when Mr. and Mrs. Bumble, turning out of the main street of the town, directed their course towards a scattered little colony of ruinous houses, distant from it some mile and a half, or thereabouts, and erected on a low unwholesome swamp, bordering upon the river.

This was far from being a place of doubtful character ; for it had long been known as the residence of none

Oliver Twist

but low russians, who, under various pretences of living by their labour, subsisted chiefly on plunder and crime. It was a collection of mere hovels: some, hastily built with loose bricks: others, of old worm-eaten ship-timber: jumbled together without any attempt at order or arrangement, and planted, for the most part, within a few feet of the river's bank.

In the heart of this cluster of huts; and skirting the river, which its upper stories overhung; stood a large building, formerly used as a manufactory of some kind. But it had long since gone to ruin. The rat, the worm, and the action of the damp, had weakened and rotted the piles on which it stood; and a considerable portion of the building had already sunk down into the water; while the remainder, tottering and bending over the dark stream, seemed to wait a favourable opportunity of following its old companion, and involving itself in the same fate.

It was before this ruinous building that the worthy couple paused, as the first peal of distant thunder reverberated in the air, and the rain commenced pouring violently down.

"The place should be somewhere here," said Bumble, consulting a scrap of paper he held in his hand.

"Halloo there!" cried a voice from above.

Following the sound, Mr. Bumble raised his head, and descried a man looking out of a door, breast-high, on the second story.

"Stand still, a minute," cried the voice; "I'll be with you directly." With which the head disappeared, and the door closed.

Mr. Bumble, who had eyed the building with very rueful looks, was apparently about to express some doubts relative to the advisability of proceeding any further with the enterprise just then, when he was prevented by the appearance of Monks: who opened a small door, near which they stood, and beckoned them inwards.

"Come in!" he cried impatiently, stamping his foot upon the ground. "Don't keep me here!"

The woman, who had hesitated at first, walked boldly in, without any other invitation. Mr. Bumble, who was ashamed or afraid to lag behind, followed: obviously

Oliver Twist

very ill at ease and with scarcely any of that remarkable dignity which was usually his chief characteristic.

"This is the woman, is it?" demanded Monks.

"Hem! That is the woman," replied Mr. Bumble.

Beckoning them to follow him, Monks hastened across the apartment, which was of considerable extent, but low in the roof. He led the way up a steep staircase, or rather ladder; and hastily closing the window-shutter of the room into which it led, lowered a lantern which hung at the end of a rope and pulley passed through one of the heavy beams in the ceiling: and which cast a dim light upon an old table and three chairs that were placed beneath it.

"Now," said Monks, when they had all three seated themselves, "the sooner we come to our business, the better for all. The woman knows what it is, does she?"

The question was addressed to Bumble; but his wife anticipated the reply, by intimating that she was perfectly acquainted with it.

"He is right in saying that you were with this woman the night she died; and that she told you something—"

"About the mother of the boy you named," replied the matron, interrupting him. "Yes."

"The first question is, of what nature was her communication?" said Monks.

"That's the second," observed the woman with much deliberation. "The first is, what may the communication be worth?"

"Who can tell that, without knowing of what kind it is?" asked Monks.

"Nobody better than you, I am persuaded," answered Mrs. Bumble.

"Humph!" said Monks significantly, and with a look of eager inquiry; "there may be money's worth to get, eh?"

"Perhaps there may," was the composed reply.

"Something that was taken from her," said Monks. "Something that she wore. Something that—"

"You had better bid," interrupted Mrs. Bumble. "I have heard enough, already, to assure me that you are the man I ought to talk to."

Mr. Bumble, who had not yet been admitted by his

Oliver Twist

better half into any greater share of the secret than he had originally possessed, listened to this dialogue with outstretched neck and distended eyes: which he directed towards his wife and Monks, by turns, in undisguised astonishment; increased, if possible, when the latter sternly demanded what sum was required for the disclosure.

“What’s it worth to you?” asked the woman, as collectedly as before.

“It may be nothing; it may be twenty pounds,” replied Monks. “Speak out, and let me know which.”

“Add five pounds to the sum you have named; give me five-and-twenty pounds in gold,” said the woman; “and I’ll tell you all I know. Not before.”

“Five-and-twenty pounds!” exclaimed Monks, drawing back.

“I spoke as plainly as I could,” replied Mrs. Bumble. “It’s not a large sum, either.”

“What if I pay it for nothing?” asked Monks, hesitating.

“You can easily take it away again,” replied the matron. “I am but a woman; alone here; and unprotected.”

“Not alone, my dear, nor unprotected neither,” submitted Mr. Bumble, in a voice tremulous with fear: “I am here, my dear. And besides,” said Mr. Bumble, his teeth chattering as he spoke, “Mr. Monks is too much of a gentleman to attempt any violence on porochial persons.”

“You are a fool,” said Mrs. Bumble, in reply; “and had better hold your tongue.”

“So! He’s your husband, eh?” said Monks.

“He my husband!” tittered the matron, parrying the question.

“I thought as much, when you came in,” rejoined Monks, marking the angry glance which the lady darted at her spouse as she spoke. “So much the better; I have less hesitation in dealing with two people, when I find that there’s only one will between them. I’m in earnest. See here!”

He thrust his hand into a side-pocket; and producing a canvas bag, told out twenty-five sovereigns on the table, and pushed them over to the woman.

Oliver Twist

"Now," he said, "gather them up; and when this peal of thunder, which I feel is coming up to break over the house-top, is gone, let's hear your story."

The thunder, which seemed in fact much nearer, and to shiver and break almost over their heads, having subsided, Monks bent forward to listen to what the woman should say.

"When this woman, that we called old Sally, died," the matron began, "she and I were alone."

"Was there no one by?" asked Monks, in the same hollow whisper. "No one who could hear, and might, by possibility, understand?"

"Not a soul," replied the woman.

"Good," said Monks, regarding her attentively. "Go on."

"She spoke of a young creature," resumed the matron, "who had died some years before; not merely in the same room, but in the same bed, in which she then lay dying."

"Ay?" said Monks, with quivering lip, and glancing over his shoulder.

"She was the mother of the child you named to him last night," said the matron, nodding carelessly towards her husband; "and this nurse had robbed her of that which the dead mother had prayed her, with her last breath, to keep for the infant's sake."

"She sold it?" cried Monks, with desperate eagerness: "did she sell it? Where? When? To whom? How long before?"

"As she told me, with great difficulty, that she had done this," said the matron, "she fell back and died."

"Without saying more?" cried Monks, in a voice which, from its very suppression, seemed only the more furious. "It's a lie! I'll not be played with. She said more."

"She didn't utter another word," said the woman; "but she clutched my gown violently, with one hand, which was partly closed; and when I saw that she was dead, and so removed the hand by force, I found it clasped a scrap of dirty paper."

"Which contained—" interposed Monks, stretching forward.

Oliver Twist

"Nothing," replied the woman; "it was a pawnbroker's duplicate."

"For what?" demanded Monks.

"In good time I'll tell you," said the woman. "The time was out in two days; I thought something might one day come of it; and so redeemed the pledge."

"Where is it now?" asked Monks quickly.

"There," replied the woman. And, as if glad to be relieved of it, she hastily threw upon the table a small kid bag scarcely large enough for a French watch, which Monks pouncing upon, tore open with trembling hands. It contained a little gold locket; in which were two locks of hair, and a plain gold wedding-ring.

"It has the word 'Agnes' engraved on the inside," said the woman. "There is a blank left for the surname; and then follows the date."

"And this is all?" said Monks, after a close and eager scrutiny of the contents of the little packet.

"All," replied the woman.

Mr. Bumble drew a long breath, as if he were glad to find that the story was over, and no mention made of taking the five-and-twenty pounds back again.

"I know nothing of the story, beyond what I can guess at," said his wife, addressing Monks, after a short silence; "and I want to know nothing; for it's safest not. But I may ask you two questions, may I?"

"You may ask," said Monks, with some show of surprise; "but whether I answer or not is another question."

"—Which makes three," observed Mr. Bumble, essaying a stroke of facetiousness.

"Is that what you expected to get from me?" demanded the matron.

"It is," replied Monks. "The other question?"

"What you propose to do with it. Can it be used against me?"

"Never," rejoined Monks; "nor against me either. See here! But don't move a step forward, or you life is not worth a bulrush."

With these words, he suddenly wheeled the table aside and pulling an iron ring in the boarding, threw back large trap-door which opened close at Mr. Bumble.

Oliver Twist

feet, and caused that gentleman to retire several paces backward, with great precipitation.

"Look down," said Monks, lowering the lantern into the gulf. "Don't fear me. I could have let you down, quietly enough, when you were seated over it, if that had been my game."

Thus encouraged the matron drew near to the brink; and even Mr. Bumble himself, impelled by curiosity, ventured to do the same. The turbid water, swollen by the heavy rain, was rushing rapidly on below; and all other sounds were lost in the noise of its plashing and eddying against the green and slimy piles. There had once been a water-mill beneath; the tide foaming and chasing round the few rotten stakes, and fragments of machinery that yet remained, seemed to dart onward, with a new impulse, when freed from the obstacles which had unavailingly attempted to stem its headlong course.

Monks drew the little packet from his breast, where he had hurriedly thrust it; and tying it to a leaden weight, which had formed a part of some pulley, and was lying on the floor, dropped it into the stream. It fell straight, and true as a die; clove the water with a scarcely audible splash; and was gone.

The three looking into each other's faces, seemed to breathe more freely.

"There!" said Monks, closing the trap-door, which fell heavily back into its former position. "If the sea ever gives up its dead, as books say it will, it will keep its gold and silver to itself, and that trash among it. We have nothing more to say, and may break up our pleasant party."

"By all means," observed Mr. Bumble, with great alacrity.

"You'll keep a quiet tongue in your head, will you?" said Monks, with a threatening look. "I am not afraid of your wife."

"You may depend upon me, young man," answered Mr. Bumble.

He lighted his lantern, and making no effort to prolong the discourse, descended in silence, followed by his wife.

Oliver Twist

CHAPTER XXXI

ON the evening following that upon which the three worthies, mentioned in the last chapter, disposed of their little matter of business as therein narrated, Mr. William Sikes, *w*akening from a nap, drowsily growled forth an inquiry what time of night it was.

The room in which Mr. Sikes propounded this question, was not one of those he had tenanted, previous to the Chertsey expedition, although it was in the same quarter of the town, and was situated at no great distance from his former lodgings.

The housebreaker was lying on the bed, wrapped in his white great-coat, by way of dressing-gown, and displaying a set of features in no degree improved by the cadaverous hue of illness, and the addition of a soiled nightcap, and a stiff, black beard of a week's growth. Seated by the window, busily engaged in patching an old waistcoat which formed a portion of the robber's ordinary dress, was a girl: so pale and reduced with watching and privation, that there would have been considerable difficulty in recognising her as the same Nancy who has already figured in this tale, but for the voice in which she replied to Mr. Sikes's question.

"Not long gone seven," said the girl. "How do you feel to-night, Bill?"

"As weak as water," replied Mr. Sikes, with an imprecation on his eyes and limbs. "Here; lend us a hand, and let me get off this thundering bed anyhow."

Illness had not improved Mr. Sikes's temper; for, as the girl raised him up and led him to a chair, he muttered various curses on her awkwardness, and struck her.

"Whining, are you?" said Sikes. "Come! Don't stand snivelling there. If you can't do anything better than that, cut off altogether. D'ye hear me?"

"Why, you don't mean to say, you'd be hard upon me to-night, Bill," said the girl, laying her hand upon his shoulder.

"No!" cried Mr. Sikes. "Why not?"

Oliver Twist

“ Such a number of nights,” said the girl, “ as I’ve been patient with you, nursing and caring for you, as if you had been a child : and this the first that I’ve seen you like yourself ; you wouldn’t have served me as you did just now, if you’d thought of that, would you ? Come, come ; say you wouldn’t.”

“ Well, then,” rejoined Mr. Sikes, “ I wouldn’t. Why, the girl’s whining again ! ”

“ It’s nothing,” said the girl, throwing herself into a chair. “ Don’t you seem to mind me. It’ll soon be over.”

“ What’ll be over ? ” demanded Mr. Sikes in a savage voice. “ What foolery are you up to, now, again ? Get up and bustle about, and don’t come over me with your woman’s nonsense.”

At any other time, this remonstrance, and the tone in which it was delivered, would have had the desired effect ; but the girl being really weak and exhausted, dropped her head over the back of the chair, and fainted. Not knowing, very well, what to do, in this uncommon emergency, Mr. Sikes tried a little blasphemy : and finding that mode of treatment wholly ineffectual, called for assistance.

“ What’s the matter here, my dear ? ” said Fagin, looking in.

“ Lend a hand to the girl, can’t you ? ” replied Sikes impatiently. “ Don’t stand chattering and grinning at me ! ”

With an exclamation of surprise, Fagin hastened to the girl’s assistance, while Mr. John Dawkins (otherwise the Artful Dodger), who had followed his venerable friend into the room, hastily deposited on the floor a bundle with which he was laden ; and snatching a bottle from the grasp of Master Charles Bates, who came close at his heels, uncorked it in a twinkling with his teeth, and poured a portion of its contents down the patient’s throat : previously taking a taste, himself, to prevent mistakes.

“ Give her a whiff of fresh air with the bellows, Charley,” said Mr. Dawkins ; “ and you slap her hands, Fagin.”

These united restoratives, administered with great energy : especially that department consigned to Master

Oliver Twist

Bates, who appeared to consider his share in the proceedings, a piece of unexampled pleasantry: were not long in producing the desired effect. The girl gradually recovered her senses; and, staggering to a chair by the bedside, hid her face upon the pillow: leaving Mr. Sikes to confront the new-comers, in some astonishment at their unlooked-for appearance.

“Why, what evil wind has blown you here?” he asked Fagin.

“No evil wind at all, my dear, for evil winds blow nobody any good; and I’ve brought something good with me, that you’ll be glad to see. Dodger, my dear, open the bundle; and give Bill the little trifles that we spent all our money on, this morning.”

In compliance with Mr. Fagin’s request, the Artful untied his bundle, which was of large size, and formed of an old table-cloth; and handed the articles it contained, one by one, to Charley Bates: who placed them on the table, with various encomiums on their rarity and excellence.

“Sitch a rabbit pie, Bill,” exclaimed that young gentleman, disclosing to view a huge pasty: “sitch delicate creeturs, with sitch tender limbs, Bill, that the wery bones melt in your mouth, and there’s no occasion to pick ‘em; half a pound of seven and sixpenny green, so precious strong that if you mix it with biling water, it’ll go nigh to blow the lid of the teapot off; a pound and a half of moist sugar that the niggers didn’t work at all at, afore they got it up to sitch a pitch of goodness,—oh no! Two half-quartern brans; pound of best fresh; piece of double Glo’ster; and, to wind up all, some of the richest sort you ever lushed!”

Uttering this last panegyric, Master Bates produced, from one of his extensive pockets, a full-sized wine-bottle, carefully corked; while Mr. Dawkins, at the same instant, poured out a wine-glassful of raw spirits from the bottle he carried: which the invalid tossed down his throat without a moment’s hesitation.

“Ah!” said Fagin, rubbing his hands with great satisfaction. “You’ll do, Bill; you’ll do now.”

“Do!” exclaimed Mr. Sikes; “I might have been done for, twenty times over, afore you’d have done

Oliver Twist

anything to help me. What d'you mean by leaving a man in this state, three weeks and more, you false-hearted wagabond?"

"I was away from London, a week and more, my dear, on a plant," replied the Jew.

"And what about the other fortnight?" demanded Sikes. "What about the other fortnight that you've left me lying here, like a sick rat in his hole?"

"I couldn't help it, Bill. I can't go into a long explanation before company; but I couldn't help it, upon my honour."

"Upon your what?" growled Sikes, with excessive disgust. "Here! Cut me off a piece of that pie, one of you boys, to take the taste of that out of my mouth, or it'll choke me dead."

"Don't be out of temper, my dear," urged Fagin, submissively. "I have never forgot you, Bill; never once."

"No! I'll pound it that you han't," replied Sikes, with a bitter grin. "You've been scheming and plotting away, every hour that I have laid shivering and burning here; and Bill was to do this; and Bill was to do that; and Bill was to do it all, dirt cheap, as soon as he got well: and was quite poor enough for your work. If it hadn't been for the girl, I might have died."

"There now, Bill," remonstrated Fagin, eagerly catching at the word. "If it hadn't been for the girl! Who but poor ould Fagin was the means of your having such a handy girl about you?"

"He says true enough there!" said Nancy, coming hastily forward. "Let him be; let him be."

"It's all very well," said Mr. Sikes; "but I must have some blunt from you to-night."

"I haven't a piece of coin about me," replied the Jew.

"Then you've got lots at home," retorted Sikes; "and I must have some from there."

"Lots!" cried Fagin, holding up his hands. "I haven't so much as would—"

"I don't know how much you've got, and I dare say you hardly know yourself, as it would take a pretty long time to count it," said Sikes; "but I must have some to-night; and that's flat."

Oliver Twist

"Well, well," said Fagin, with a sigh, "I'll send the Artful round presently."

"You won't do nothing of the kind," rejoined Mr. Sikes. "The Artful's a deal too artful, and would forget to come, or lose his way, or get dodged by traps and so be perwented, or anything for an excuse, if you put him up to it. Nancy shall go to the ken and fetch it, to make all sure; and I'll lie down and have a snooze while she's gone."

After a great deal of haggling and squabbling, Fagin beat down the amount of the required advance from five pounds to three pounds four and sixpence: protesting with many solemn asseverations that that would only leave him eighteenpence to keep house with; Mr. Sikes sullenly remarking that if he couldn't get any more he must be content with that, Nancy prepared to accompany him home; while the Dodger and Master Bates put the eatables in the cupboard. The Jew then, taking leave of his affectionate friend, returned homeward, attended by Nancy and the boys.

In due course, they arrived at Fagin's abode, where they found Toby Crackit and Mr. Chitling intent upon a game of cribbage.

"Has nobody been, Toby?" asked Fagin.

"Not a living leg," answered Mr. Crackit, pulling up his collar; "it's been as dull as swipes. You ought to stand something handsome, Fagin, to recompense me for keeping house so long." With this Mr. Toby Crackit swaggered out of the room, with much elegance and gentility.

"Dodger! Charley!" cried Fagin. "It's time you were on the lay. Come! It's near ten, and nothing done yet."

In obedience to this hint, the boys, nodding to Nancy, took up their hats, and also left the room.

"Now," said Fagin, "I'll go and get you that cash, Nancy. This is only the key of a little cupboard where I keep a few odd things the boys get, my dear. I never lock up my money, for I've got none to lock up, my dear—ha! ha! ha!—none to lock up. It's a poor trade, Nancy, and no thanks; but I'm fond of seeing the young people about me; and I bear it all, I bear it

Oliver Twist

all. Hush ! " he said, hastily concealing the key in his breast ; " who's that ? Listen ! "

Laying his skinny forefinger upon his lip, the Jew carried a candle to the door, as a man's step was heard upon the stairs without. He reached it, at the same moment as the visitor, who, coming hastily into the room, was close upon the girl before he observed her.

It was Monks.

" Only one of my young people," said Fagin, observing that Monks drew back, on beholding a stranger. " Don't move, Nancy."

The girl drew closer to the table, and glancing at Monks with an air of careless levity, withdrew her eyes.

" Any news ? " inquired Fagin.

" Great."

" And—and—good ? " asked Fagin, hesitating as though he feared to vex the other man by being too sanguine.

" Not bad, any way," replied Monks, with a smile. " I have been prompt enough this time. Let me have a word with you."

The girl drew closer to the table, and made no offer to leave the room, although she could see that Monks was pointing to her. The Jew : perhaps fearing she might say something aloud about the money, if he endeavoured to get rid of her : pointed upwards, and took Monks out of the room.

" Not that infernal hole we were in before," she could hear the man say as they went upstairs. Fagin laughed ; and making some reply which did not reach her, seemed, by the creaking of the boards, to lead his companion to the second story.

Before the sound of their footsteps had ceased to echo through the house, the girl had slipped off her shoes ; and drawing her gown loosely over her head, and muffling her arms in it, stood at the door, listening with breathless interest. The moment the noise ceased, she glided from the room ; ascended the stairs with incredible softness and silence ; and was lost in the gloom above.

The room remained deserted for a quarter of an hour or more ; the girl glided back with the same unearthly tread ; and, immediately afterwards, the two men were

Oliver Twist

heard descending. Monks went at once into the street · and the Jew crawled upstairs again for the money. When he returned, the girl was adjusting her shawl and bonnet, as if preparing to be gone.

“ Why, Nance,” exclaimed the Jew, starting back as he put down the candle, “ how pale you are ! ”

“ Pale ! ” echoed the girl, shading her eyes with her hands, as if to look steadily at him.

“ Quite horrible. What have you been doing to yourself ? ”

“ Nothing that I know of, except sitting in this close place for I don’t know how long and all,” replied the girl carelessly. “ Come ! Let me get back ; that’s a dear.”

With a sigh for every piece of money, Fagin told the amount into her hand. They parted without more conversation, merely interchanging a “ good night.”

When the girl got into the open street, she sat down upon a doorstep; and seemed, for a few moments, wholly bewildered and unable to pursue her way. Suddenly she arose ; and hurrying on, soon reached the dwelling where she had left the housebreaker.

If she betrayed any agitation, when she presented herself to Mr. Sikes, he did not observe it ; for merely inquiring if she had brought the money, and receiving a reply in the affirmative, he uttered a growl of satisfaction, and replacing his head upon the pillow, resumed the slumbers which her arrival had interrupted.

It was fortunate for her that the possession of money occasioned him so much employment next day in the way of eating and drinking ; and withal had so beneficial an effect in smoothing down the asperities of his temper ; that he had neither time nor inclination to be very critical upon her behaviour and deportment. That she had all the abstracted and nervous manner of one who is on the eve of some bold and hazardous step, which it has required no common struggle to resolve upon, would have been obvious to the lynx-eyed Fagin, who would most probably have taken the alarm at once ; but Mr. Sikes saw nothing unusual in her demeanour, and indeed, troubled himself so little about her, that, had her agitation been far more perceptible than it was, it would have been very unlikely to have awakened his suspicions.

Oliver Twist

As that day closed in, the girl's excitement increased ; and, when night came on, and she sat by, watching until the housebreaker should drink himself asleep, there was an unusual paleness in her cheek, and a fire in her eye, that even Sikes observed with astonishment.

"Why, burn my body ! " said the man, raising himself on his hands as he stared the girl in the face. " You look like a corpse come to life again. What's the matter ? "

" Matter ! " replied the girl. " Nothing. What do you look at me so hard for ? "

" I tell you wot it is," said Sikes ; " if you haven't caught the fever, and got it comin' on, now, there's something more than usual in the wind, and something dangerous too. You're not a-going to—"

" Do what ? " asked the girl.

" There ain't," said Sikes, fixing his eyes upon her, and muttering the words to himself ; " there ain't a stauncher-hearted gal going. She's got the fever coming on ; that's it."

Fortifying himself with this assurance, Sikes called for his physic. The girl jumped up, with great alacrity ; poured it quickly out, but with her back towards him ; and held the vessel to his lips, while he drank off the contents.

" Now," said the robber, " come and sit aside of me, and put on your own face ; or I'll alter it so, that you won't know it again when you *do* want it."

The girl obeyed. Sikes, locking her hand in his, fell back upon the pillow : turning his eyes upon her face. They closed ; opened again ; closed once more ; again opened. He shifted his position restlessly ; and, after dozing again, and again, for two or three minutes, and as often springing up with a look of terror, and gazing vacantly about him, was suddenly stricken, as it were, while in the very attitude of rising, into a deep and heavy sleep. The grasp of his hand relaxed ; the up-raised arm fell languidly by his side ; and he lay like one in a profound trance.

" The laudanum has taken effect at last," murmured the girl, as she rose from the bedside. " I may be too late, even now."

She hastily dressed herself in her bonnet and shawl :

Oliver Twist

looking fearfully round, from time to time, as if, despite the sleeping draught, she expected every moment to feel the pressure of Sikes's heavy hand upon her shoulder ; and then opening and closing the room-door with noiseless touch, she hurried from the house.

A watchman was crying half-past nine, down a dark passage through which she had to pass, in gaining the main thoroughfare. Many of the shops were already closing in the back lanes and avenues through which she tracked her way, in making from Spitalfields towards the West-End of London. She tore along the narrow pavement : elbowing the passengers from side to side ; and darting almost under the horses' heads, crossed crowded streets, where clusters of persons were eagerly watching their opportunity to do the like.

"The woman is mad !" said the people, turning to look after her as she rushed away.

When she reached the more wealthy quarter of the town, the streets were comparatively deserted ; and here her headlong progress excited a still greater curiosity in the stragglers whom she hurried past. Some quickened their pace behind, as though to see whither she was hastening at such an unusual rate ; and a few made head upon her, and looked back, surprised at her undiminished speed ; but they fell off one by one ; and when she neared her place of destination, she was alone.

It was a family hotel in a quiet but handsome street near Hyde Park. As the brilliant light of the lamp which burnt before its door, guided her to the spot, the clock struck eleven. She had loitered for a few paces as though irresolute, and making up her mind to advance ; but the sound determined her, and she stepped into the hall. The porter's seat was vacant. She looked round with an air of incertitude, and advanced towards the stairs.

"Now, young woman !" said a smartly-dressed female, looking out from a door behind her, " who do you want here ?"

"A lady who is stopping in this house," answered the girl.

"A lady !" was the reply, accompanied with a scornful look. "What lady ?"

Oliver Twist

"Miss Maylie," said Nancy.

The young woman, who had, by this time, noted her appearance, replied only by a look of virtuous disdain ; and summoned a man to answer her. To him, Nancy repeated her request.

"What name am I to say ?" asked the waiter.

"It's of no use saying any," replied Nancy.

"Nor business ?" said the man.

"No, nor that neither," rejoined the girl. "I must see the lady."

"Come !" said the man, pushing her towards the door. "None of this. Take yourself off."

"I shall be carried out, if I go !" said the girl violently ; "and I can make that a job that two of you won't like to do. Isn't there anybody here," she said, looking round, "that will see a simple message carried for a poor wretch like me ?"

This appeal produced an effect on a good-tempered-faced man-cook, who with some other of the servants was looking on, and who stepped forward to interfere.

"Take it up for her, Joe ; can't you ?" said this person.

"What's the good ?" replied the man. "You don't suppose the young lady will see such as her ; do you ?"

"Do what you like with me," said the girl, turning to the men again ; "but do what I ask you first, and I ask you to give this message for God Almighty's sake."

The soft-hearted cook added his intercession, and the result was that the man who had first appeared undertook its delivery.

"What's it to be ?" said the man, with one foot on the stairs.

"That a young woman earnestly asks to speak to Miss Maylie alone," said Nancy ; "and that if the lady will only hear the first word she has to say, she will know whether to hear her business, or to have her turned out of doors as an impostor."

The man ran upstairs, and Nancy remained pale and almost breathless until he returned and said the young woman was to walk up. She followed him with trembling limbs, to a small antechamber, lighted by a lamp from the ceiling. Here he left her, and retired.

Oliver Twist

CHAPTER XXXII

SHE heard a light step approaching the door opposite to that by which she had entered, and raised her eyes to observe that the figure which presented itself was that of a slight and beautiful girl ; then, bending them on the ground, she tossed her head with affected carelessness as she said :

“ It’s a hard matter to get to see you, lady. If I had taken offence, and gone away, as many would have done, you’d have been sorry for it one day, and not without reason either.”

“ I am very sorry if any one has behaved harshly to you,” replied Rose. “ Do not think of that. Tell me why you wished to see me. I am the person you inquired for.”

The kind tone of this answer, the sweet voice, the gentle manner, the absence of any accent of haughtiness or displeasure, took the girl completely by surprise, and she burst into tears.

“ Oh, lady, lady ! ” she said, clasping her hands passionately before her face, “ I am the girl that dragged little Oliver back to old Fagin’s, on the night he went out from the house in Pentonville.”

“ You ! ” said Rose Maylie.

“ I, lady ! ” replied the girl. “ I have stolen away from those who would surely murder me, if they knew I had been here, to tell you what I have overheard. Do you know a man named Monks ? ”

“ No,” said Rose.

“ He knows you,” replied the girl ; “ and knew you were here, for it was by hearing him tell the place that I found you out.”

“ I never heard the name,” said Rose.

“ Then he goes by some other amongst us,” rejoined the girl, “ which I more than thought before. Some time ago, and soon after Oliver was put into your house on the night of the robbery, I listened to a conversation between this man and Fagin in the dark. I found out,

Oliver Twist

from what I heard, that Monks—the man I asked you about, you know—”

“ Yes,” said Rose, “ I understand.”

“ —That Monks,” pursued the girl, “ had seen him accidentally with two of our boys on the day we first lost him, and had known him directly to be the same child that he was watching for, though I couldn’t make out why. A bargain was struck with Fagin, that if Oliver was got back he should have a certain sum; and he was to have more for making him a thief, which this Monks wanted for some purpose of his own.”

“ For what purpose ? ” asked Rose.

“ He caught sight of my shadow on the wall as I listened, in the hope of finding out,” said the girl; “ and there are not many people besides me that could have got out of their way in time to escape discovery. But I did; and I saw him no more till last night.”

“ And what occurred then ? ”

“ I’ll tell you, lady. Last night he came again. Again they went upstairs, and I listened at the door. The first words I heard Monks say were these: ‘ So the only proofs of the boy’s identity lie at the bottom of the river, and the old hag that received them from the mother is in her coffin.’ Monks said that though he had got the boy’s money safely now, he’d rather have had it the other way; for, what a game it would have been to have brought down the boast of the father’s will, by driving him through every jail in town, and then hauling him up for some capital felony which Fagin could easily manage, after having made a good profit of him besides.”

“ What is all this ? ” said Rose.

“ The truth, lady, though it comes from my lips,” replied the girl. “ Then he said that if he could gratify his hatred by taking the boy’s life without bringing his own neck in danger, he would; but, as he couldn’t, he’d be upon the watch to meet him at every turn in life; and if he took advantage of his birth and history, he might harm him yet. ‘ In short, Fagin,’ he says, ‘ Jew as you are, you never laid such snares as I’ll contrive for my young brother, Oliver.’ ”

“ His brother ! ” exclaimed Rose.

“ Those were his words,” said Nancy, glancing uneasily

Oliver Twist

round, as she had scarcely ceased to do, since she began to speak, for a vision of Sikes haunted her perpetually. "And more. When he spoke of you and the other lady, and said it seemed contrived against him, that Oliver should come into your hands, he laughed, and said there was some comfort in that too, for how many thousands and hundreds of thousands of pounds would you not give, if you had them, to know who your two-legged spaniel was."

"You do not mean," said Rose, turning very pale, "to tell me that this was said in earnest?"

"He spoke in hard and angry earnest, if a man ever did," replied the girl, shaking her head. "He is an earnest man when his hatred is up. It is growing late, and I have to reach home without suspicion of having been on such an errand as this. I must get back quickly."

"What am I to do?" said Rose. "I should not let you depart from me thus."

"You should, lady, and I know you will," rejoined the girl, rising. "You must have some kind gentleman about you that will hear it as a secret, and advise you what to do."

"But where can I find you again when it is necessary?" asked Rose. "I do not seek to know where these dreadful people live, but where will you be walking or passing at any settled period from this time?"

"Will you promise me that you will have my secret strictly kept, and come alone, or with the only other person that knows it; and that I shall not be watched or followed?" asked the girl.

"I promise you solemnly," answered Rose.

"Every Sunday night, from eleven until the clock strikes twelve," said the girl without hesitation, "I will walk on London Bridge if I am alive."

"Stay another moment," interposed Rose, as the girl moved hurriedly towards the door. "You will take some money from me, which may enable you to live without dishonesty—at all events until we meet again?"

"Not a penny," replied the girl, waving her hand. "God bless you, sweet lady, and send as much happiness on your head as I have brought shame on mine!"

Thus speaking, and sobbing aloud, the unhappy

Oliver Twist

creature turned away ; while Rose Maylie, overpowered by this extraordinary interview, which had more the semblance of a rapid dream than an actual occurrence, sank into a chair, and endeavoured to collect her wandering thoughts.

CHAPTER XXXIII

HER situation was, indeed, one of no common trial and difficulty. They purposed remaining in London only three days, prior to departing for some weeks to a distant part of the coast. It was now midnight of the first day. What course of action could she determine upon, which could be adopted in eight-and-forty hours ? Or how could she postpone the journey without exciting suspicion ?

Mr. Losberne was with them, and would be for the next two days ; but Rose was too well acquainted with the excellent gentleman's impetuosity, and foresaw too clearly the wrath with which, in the first explosion of his indignation, he would regard the instrument of Oliver's re-capture, to trust him with the secret. These were all reasons for the greatest caution and most circumspect behaviour in communicating it to Mrs. Maylie, whose first impulse would infallibly be to hold a conference with the worthy doctor on the subject. As to resorting to any legal adviser, even if she had known how to do so, it was scarcely to be thought of, for the same reasons.

Rose passed a sleepless and anxious night. After more communing with herself next day, she arrived at the conclusion of consulting Harry Maylie.

She had taken up the pen, and laid it down again fifty times, and had considered and reconsidered the first line of her letter without writing the first word, when Oliver, who had been walking in the streets, with Mr. Giles for a body-guard, entered the room in such breathless haste and violent agitation, as seemed to betoken some new cause of alarm.

Oliver Twist

"What makes you look so flurried?" asked Rose, advancing to meet him.

"I have seen the gentleman," replied Oliver, scarcely able to articulate, "the gentleman who was so good to me—Mr. Brownlow, that we have so often talked about."

"Where?" asked Rose.

"Getting out of a coach," replied Oliver, shedding tears of delight, "and going into a house. I didn't speak to him—I couldn't speak to him, for he didn't see me, and I trembled so, that I was not able to go up to him. But Giles asked, for me, whether he lived there, and they said he did. Look here," said Oliver, opening a scrap of paper, "here it is; here's where he lives—I'm going there directly!"

With her attention not a little distracted by these exclamations of joy, Rose read the address, which was Craven Street, in the Strand. She very soon determined upon turning the discovery to account.

"Quick!" she said. "Tell them to fetch a hansom-coach, and be ready to go with me. I will take you there directly, without a minute's loss of time. I will only tell my aunt that we are going out for an hour, and be ready as soon as you are."

Oliver needed no prompting to despatch, and in little more than five minutes they were on their way to Craven Street. When they arrived there, Rose left Oliver in the coach, under pretence of preparing the old gentleman to receive him; and sending up her card by the servant, requested to see Mr. Brownlow on very pressing business. The servant soon returned, to beg that she would walk upstairs; and following him into an upper room, Miss Maylie was presented to an elderly gentleman of benevolent appearance, in a bottle-green coat. At no great distance from him, was seated another old gentleman, in nainkeen breeches and gaiters; who did not look particularly benevolent, and who was sitting with his hands clasped on the top of a thick stick, and his chin propped thereupon.

"Mr. Brownlow, I believe, sir?" said Rose, glancing from one gentleman to the other.

"That is my name," said the old gentleman in the bottle-green coat. "This is my friend, Mr. Grimwig."

Oliver Twist

"I shall surprise you very much, I have no doubt," said Rose. "but you once showed great benevolence and goodness to a very dear young friend of mine, and I am sure you will take an interest in hearing of him again."

"Indeed!" said Mr. Brownlow.

"Oliver Twist you knew him as," replied Rose.

The words no sooner escaped her lips, than Mr. Grimwig, who had been affecting to dip into a large book that lay on the table, upset it with a great crash, and falling back in his chair, discharged from his features every expression but one of unmitigated wonder.

Mr. Brownlow was no less surprised. He drew his chair nearer to Miss Maylie's, and said,

"Do me the favour, my dear young lady, to leave entirely out of the question that goodness and benevolence of which you speak, and of which nobody else knows anything; and if you have it in your power to produce any evidence which will alter the unfavourable opinion I was once induced to entertain of that poor child, in Heaven's name put me in possession of it."

Rose at once related all that had befallen Oliver since he left Mr. Brownlow's house; reserving Nancy's information for that gentleman's private ear, and concluding with the assurance that his only sorrow, for some months past, had been the not being able to meet with his former benefactor and friend.

"Thank God!" said the old gentleman. "This is great happiness to me, great happiness. But you have not told me where he is now, Miss Maylie."

"He is waiting in a coach at the door," replied Rose.

"At this door!" cried the old gentleman. With which he hurried out of the room, down the stairs, up the coach-steps, and into the coach, without another word.

When the room-door closed behind him, Mr. Grimwig lifted up his head, and converting one of the hind legs of his chair into a pivot, described three distinct circles with the assistance of his stick and the table: sitting in it all the time. After performing this evolution, he rose and limped as fast as he could up and down the room at least a dozen times, and then stopping suddenly before Rose, kissed her without the slightest preface.

Oliver Twist

"Hush!" he said, as the young lady rose in some alarm at this unusual proceeding. "Don't be afraid. I'm old enough to be your grandfather. You're a sweet girl. I like you. Here they are!"

In fact, as he threw himself at one dexterous dive into his former seat, Mr. Brownlow returned, accompanied by Oliver, whom Mr. Grimwig received very graciously; and if the gratification of that moment had been the only reward for all her anxiety and care in Oliver's behalf, Rose Maylie would have been well repaid.

"There is somebody else who should not be forgotten, by the by," said Mr. Brownlow, ringing the bell. "Send Mrs. Bedwin here, if you please."

The old housekeeper answered the summons with all dispatch; and dropping a curtsey at the door, waited for orders.

"Why, you get blinder every day, Bedwin," said Mr. Brownlow, rather testily.

"Well, that I do, sir," replied the old lady. "People's eyes, at my time of life, don't improve with age, sir."

"I could have told you that," rejoined Mr. Brownlow; "but put on your glasses, and see if you can't find out what you were wanted for, will you?"

The old lady began to ruminate in her pocket for her spectacles. But Oliver's patience was not proof against this new trial; and yielding to his first impulse, he sprang into her arms.

"God be good to me!" cried the old lady, embracing him; "it is my innocent boy!"

"My dear old nurse!" cried Oliver.

"He would come back—I knew he would," said the old lady, holding him in her arms. "How well he looks, and how like a gentleman's son he is dressed again! Where have you been, this long, long while?" Now holding Oliver from her to mark how he had grown, now clasping him to her and passing her fingers fondly through his hair, the good soul laughed and wept upon his neck by turns.

Leaving her and Oliver to compare notes at leisure, Mr. Brownlow led the way into another room; and there, heard from Rose a full narration of her interview with Nancy, which occasioned him no little surprise and

Oliver Twist

perplexity. Rose also explained her reasons for not confiding in her friend Mr. Losberne in the first instance. The old gentleman considered that she had acted prudently, and readily undertook to hold solemn conference with the worthy doctor himself. To afford him an early opportunity for the execution of this design, it was arranged that he should call at the hotel at eight o'clock that evening, and that in the meantime Mrs. Maylie should be cautiously informed of all that had occurred. These preliminaries adjusted, Rose and Oliver returned home.

Rose had by no means overrated the measure of the good doctor's wrath. Nancy's history was no sooner unfolded to him, than he poured forth a shower of mingled threats and execrations ; threatened to make her the first victim of the combined ingenuity of Messrs. Blathers and Duff ; and actually put on his hat preparatory to sallying forth to obtain the assistance of those worthies. And, doubtless, he would, in this first outbreak, have carried the intention into effect without a moment's consideration of the consequences, if he had not been restrained by such arguments and representations as seemed best calculated to dissuade him from his hot-brained purpose.

"Then what is to be done ?" said the impetuous doctor, when they had rejoined the two ladies. "Are we to pass a vote of thanks to all these vagabonds, and beg them to accept a hundred pounds, or so, apiece, as a trifling mark of our esteem ?"

"Not exactly that," rejoined Mr. Brownlow, laughing ; "but we must proceed gently and with great care."

"Gentleness and care," exclaimed the doctor. "I'd send them one and all to—"

"Never mind where," interposed Mr. Brownlow. "But reflect whether sending them anywhere is likely to attain the object we have in view."

"What object ?" asked the doctor.

"Simply, the discovery of Oliver's parentage, and regaining for him the inheritance of which, if this story be true, he has been fraudulently deprived."

"Ah !" said Mr. Losberne, cooling himself with his pocket-handkerchief ; "I almost forgot that."

Oliver Twist

"It is quite clear," pursued Mr. Brownlow, "that we shall have extreme difficulty in getting to the bottom of this mystery, unless we can bring this man, Monks, upon his knees. That can only be done by stratagem, and by catching him when he is not surrounded by these people. For, suppose he were apprehended, we have no proof against him. He is not even (so far as we know) concerned with the gang in any of their robberies. If he were not discharged, it is very unlikely that he could receive any further punishment than being committed to prison as a rogue and vagabond; and of course ever afterwards his mouth would be closed."

"Then," said the doctor impetuously, "I put it to you again, whether you think it reasonable that this promise to the girl should be considered binding; a promise made with the best and kindest intentions, but really—"

"Do not discuss the point, my dear young lady, pray," said Mr. Brownlow, interrupting Rose as she was about to speak. "The promise shall be kept. I don't think it will, in the slightest degree, interfere with our proceedings. But, before we can resolve upon any precise course of action, it will be necessary to see the girl; to ascertain from her whether she will point out this Monks, on the understanding that he is to be dealt with by us, and not by the law; or, if she will not, or cannot do that, to procure from her such an account of his haunts and description of his person, as will enable us to identify him. She cannot be seen until next Sunday night; this is Tuesday. I would suggest that in the meantime, we remain perfectly quiet, and keep these matters secret even from Oliver himself."

Although Mr. Losberne received with many wry faces a proposal involving a delay of five whole days, he was fain to admit that no better course occurred to him just then; and as both Rose and Mrs. Maylie sided very strongly with Mr. Brownlow, that gentleman's proposition was carried unanimously.

"I should like," he said, "to call in the aid of my friend Grimwig. He is a strange creature, but a shrewd one, and might prove of material assistance to us."

Oliver Twist

"I have no objection to your calling in your friend if I may call in mine," said the doctor.

"We must put it to the vote," replied Mr. Brownlow; "who may he be?"

"That lady's son, and this young lady's—very old friend," said the doctor, motioning towards Mrs. Maylie, and concluding with an expressive glance at her niece.

Rose blushed deeply, but she did not make any audible objection to this motion (possibly she felt in a hopeless minority); and Harry Maylie and Mr. Grimwig were accordingly added to the committee.

"We stay in town, of course," said Mrs. Maylie, "while there remains the slightest prospect of prosecuting this inquiry with a chance of success. I will spare neither trouble nor expense in behalf of the object in which we are all so deeply interested, and I am content to remain here, if it be for twelve months, so long as you assure me that any hope remains."

CHAPTER XXXIV

UPON the night when Nancy, having lulled Mr. Sikes to sleep, hurried on her self-imposed mission to Rose Maylie, there advanced towards London, by the Great North Road, two persons, upon whom it is expedient that this history should bestow some attention.

They were a man and a woman; the former one of those long-limbed, knock-kneed, shambling, bony people, to whom it is difficult to assign any precise age. The woman was young, but of a robust and hardy make, as she need have been to bear the weight of the heavy bundle which was strapped to her back. Her companion was not encumbered with much luggage, as there merely dangled from a stick which he carried over his shoulder, a small parcel wrapped in a common handkerchief, and apparently light enough. This circumstance, added to the length of his legs, enabled him with much ease to keep some half-dozen paces in advance of his companion, to whom he occasionally turned with an impatient jerk

Oliver Twist

of the head : as if reproaching her tardiness, and urging her to greater exertion.

Thus, they had toiled along the dusty road, until they passed through Highgate archway ; when the foremost traveller stopped and called impatiently to his companion.

"Come on, can't yer ? What a lazybones yer are, Charlotte."

"It's a heavy load, I can tell you," said the woman, coming up, almost breathless with fatigue. "Is it much farther ?"

"Much farther ! Yer as good as there," said the long-legged tramp pointing out before him. "Look there ! Those are the lights of London."

"They're a good two mile off, at least," said the woman despondingly.

"Never mind whether they're two mile off, or twenty," said Noah Claypole ; for he it was ; "but get up and come on, or I'll kick yer, and so I give yer notice."

As Noah's red nose grew redder with anger, and as he crossed the road while speaking, as if fully prepared to put his threat into execution, the woman rose without any further remark, and trudged onward by his side.

"Where do you mean to stop for the night, Noah ?" she asked, after they had walked a few hundred yards.

"How should I know ?" replied Noah, whose temper had been considerably impaired by walking.

"Near, I hope," said Charlotte.

"No, not near," replied Mr. Claypole. "I shall go and lose myself among the narrowest streets I can find, and not stop till we come to the very out-of-the-wayest house I can set eyes on. 'Cod, yer may thank yer stars I've got a head ; for if we hadn't gone, at first, the wrong road a purpose, and come back across country, yer'd have been locked up hard and fast a week ago, my lady. And serve yer right for being a fool."

"I know I ain't as cunning as you are," replied Charlotte ; "but don't put all the blame on me, and say I should have been locked up. You would have been if I had been, any way."

"Yer took the money from the till, yer know yer did " said Mr. Claypole.

Oliver Twist

“ I took it for you, Noah, dear,” rejoined Charlotte.

“ Did I keep it ? ” asked Mr. Claypole.

“ No ; you trusted in me, and let me carry it, like a dear, and so you are,” said the lady, chucking him under the chin, and drawing her arm through his.

This was indeed the case ; but as it was not Mr. Claypole’s habit to repose a blind and foolish confidence in anybody, it should be observed, in justice to that gentleman, that he had trusted Charlotte to this extent, in order that, if they were pursued, the money might be found on her : which would leave him an opportunity of asserting his innocence of any theft, and would greatly facilitate his chances of escape.

In pursuance of this cautious plan, Mr. Claypole went on, without halting, until he arrived at the Angel at Islington, where he wisely judged, from the crowd of passengers and number of vehicles, that London began in earnest. Just pausing to observe which appeared the most crowded streets, and consequently the most to be avoided, he crossed into St. John’s Road, and was soon deep in the obscurity of the intricate and dirty ways, which lie between Gray’s Inn Lane and Smithfield.

Through these streets, Noah Claypole walked, dragging Charlotte after him ; now stepping into the kennel to embrace at a glance the whole external character of some small public-house ; now jogging on again, as some fancied appearance induced him to believe it too public for his purpose. At length, he stopped in front of one, more humble in appearance and more dirty than any he had yet seen ; and, having crossed over and surveyed it from the opposite pavement, graciously announced his intention of putting up there, for the night.

“ So give us the bundle,” said Noah, unstrapping it from the woman’s shoulders, and slinging it over his own ; “ and don’t yer speak, except when yer spoke to. What’s the name of the house—t-h-r—three what ? ”

“ Cripples,” said Charlotte.

“ Three Cripples,” repeated Noah, “ and a very good sign too. Now, then ! Keep close at my heels, and come along.” With these injunctions, he pushed the rattling door with his shoulder, and entered the house, followed by his companion.

Oliver Twist

There was nobody at the bar but a young Jew, who, with his two elbows on the counter, was reading a dirty newspaper. He stared very hard at Noah, and Noah stared very hard at him.

"Is this the Three Cripples?" asked Noah.

"That is the dabe of this 'ouse," replied the Jew.

"A gentleman we met on the road, coming up from the country, recommended us here," said Noah, nudging Charlotte. "We want to sleep here to-night."

"I'b dot certaid you cad," said Barney, who was the attendant sprite; "but I'll idquirc."

"Show us the tap, and give us a bit of cold meat and a drop of beer while yer inquiring, will yer?" said Noah.

Barney complied by ushering them into a small back-room, and setting the required viands before them: having done which, he informed the travellers that they could be lodged that night, and left the amiable couple to their refreshment.

Now, this back-room was immediately behind the bar, and some steps lower, so that any person connected with the house, undrawing a small curtain which concealed a single pane of glass fixed in the wall of the last-named apartment, about five feet from its flooring, could look down upon any guests in the back-room without any great hazard of being observed (the glass being in a dark angle of the wall, between which and a large upright beam the observer had to thrust himself), but could, by applying his ear to the partition, ascertain with tolerable distinctness, their subject of conversation. The landlord of the house had not withdrawn his eye from this place of espial for five minutes, when Fagin, in the course of his evening's business, came into the bar to inquire after some of his young pupils.

"Hush!" said Barney: "stradegers id the next roob."

"Strangers!" repeated the old man in a whisper.

"Ah! Ad rub uds too," added Barney. "Frob the cuttry, but subthig in your way, or I'b bistaked."

Fagin appeared to receive this communication with great interest. Mounting a stool, he cautiously applied his eye to the pane of glass, from which secret post he could see Mr. Claypole taking cold beef from the dish, and porter from the pot, and administering homœopathic

Oliver Twist

doses of both to Charlotte, who sat patiently by, eating and drinking at his pleasure.

“Aha!” he whispered, looking round to Barney. “I like that fellow’s looks. He’d be of use to us; he knows how to train the girl already. Don’t make as much noise as a mouse, my dear, and let me hear ‘em talk—let me hear ‘em.”

He again applied his eye to the glass, and turning his ear to the partition, listened attentively.

“So I mean to be a gentleman,” said Mr. Claypole. “No more jolly old coffins, Charlotte, but a gentleman’s life for me: and if yer like yer shall be a lady.”

“I should like that well enough, dear,” replied Charlotte; “but tills ain’t to be emptied every day, and people to get clear off after it.”

“Tills be blowed!” said Mr. Claypole; “there’s more things besides tills to be emptied.”

“What do you mean?” asked his companion.

“Pockets, women’s ridiculous, houses, mail-coaches, banks!” said Mr. Claypole, rising with the porter.

“But you can’t do all that, dear,” said Charlotte.

“I shall look out to get into company with them as can,” replied Noah. “They’ll be able to make us useful some way or another. Why, you yourself are worth fifty women; I never see such a precious sly and deceitful creature as yer can be when I let yer.”

After expressing this opinion, Mr. Claypole looked into the porter-pot with an aspect of deep wisdom; and having well shaken its contents, nodded condescendingly to Charlotte, and took a draught, wherewith he appeared greatly refreshed. He was meditating another, when the sudden opening of the door, and the appearance of a stranger, interrupted him.

The stranger was Mr. Fagin. And very amiable he looked, and a very low bow he made, as he advanced, and setting himself down at the nearest table, ordered something to drink of the grinning Barney.

“A pleasant night, sir, but cool for the time of year,” said Fagin, rubbing his hands. “From the country, I see, sir?”

“How do yer see that?” asked Noah Claypole.

“We have not so much dust as that in London,”

Oliver Twist

replied Fagin, pointing from Noah's shoes to those of his companion, and from them to the two bundles.

"Yer a sharp seller," said Noah. "Ha! ha! only hear that, Charlotte!"

"Why, one need be sharp in this town, my dear," replied the Jew, sinking his voice to a confidential whisper; "and that's the truth."

Fagin followed up this remark by striking the side of his nose with his right forefinger, and put about the liquor which Barney re-appeared with, in a very friendly manner.

"Good stuff that," observed Mr. Claypole, smacking his lips.

"Dear!" said Fagin. "A man need be always emptying a till, or a pocket, or a woman's reticule, or a house, or a mail-coach, or a bank, if he drinks it regularly."

Mr. Claypole no sooner heard this extract from his own remarks than he fell back in his chair, and looked from the Jew to Charlotte with a countenance of ashy paleness and excessive terror.

"Don't mind me, my dear," said Fagin, drawing his chair closer. "Ha! ha! it was lucky it was only me that heard you by chance."

"I didn't take it," stammered Noah; "it was all her doing: yer've got it now, Charlotte, yer know yer have."

"No matter who's got it, or who did it, my dear!" replied Fagin, glancing, nevertheless, with a hawk's eye at the girl and the two bundles. "I'm in that way myself, and I like you for it."

"In what way?" asked Mr. Claypole, a little recovering.

"In that way of business," rejoined Fagin; "and so are the people of the house. You've hit the right nail upon the head, and are as safe here as you could be. There is not a safer place in all this town than is the Cripples; that is, when I like to make it so. And I have taken a fancy to you and the young woman; so I've said the word, and you may make your minds easy."

Noah Claypole's mind might have been at ease after this assurance, but his body certainly was not; for he

Oliver Twist

shuffled and writhed about, into various aneouth positions : eyeing his new friend meanwhile with mingled fear and suspicion.

“ I’ll tell you more,” said Fagin, after he had reassured the girl, by dint of friendly nods and muttered encouragements. “ I have got a friend that I think can gratify your darling wish, and put you in the right way, where you can take whatever department of the business you think will suit you best at first, and be taught all the others. Here ! Let me have a word with you outside.”

“ There’s no occasion to trouble ourselves to move,” said Noah. “ She’ll take the luggage upstairs the while. Charlotte, see to them bundles ! ”

This mandate, which had been delivered with great majesty, was obeyed without the slightest demur ; and Charlotte made the best of her way off with the packages while Noah held the door open and watched her out.

“ Now, what do you think ? ” said Fagin. “ If you was to like my friend, could you do better than join him ? ”

“ Is he in a good way of business ? —that’s where it is ! ” responded Noah, winking one of his little eyes.

“ The top of the tree ; employs a power of hands ; has the very best society in the profession.”

“ Regular town-makers ? ” asked Mr. Claypole.

“ Not a countryman among ‘em ; and I don’t think he’d take you, even on my recommendation, if he didn’t run rather short of assistants just now,” replied Fagin.

“ Should I have to hand over ? ” said Noah, slapping his breeches-pocket.

“ It couldn’t possibly be done without,” replied Fagin, in a most decided manner.

“ When could I see him ? ” asked Noah doubtfully.

“ To-morrow morning.”

“ Where ? ”

“ Here.”

“ Um ! ” said Noah. “ What’s the wages ? ”

“ Live like a gentleman — board and lodging, pipes and spirits free—half of all you earn, and half of all the young woman earns,” replied Mr. Fagin.

Whether Noah Claypole would have acceded even

Oliver Twist

to these glowing terms, had he been a perfectly free agent, is very doubtful ; but as he recollects that, in the event of his refusal it was in the power of his new acquaintance to give him up to justice immediately, he gradually relented, and said he thought that would suit him.

“ But, yer see,” observed Noah, “ as she will be able to do a good deal, I should like to take something very light.”

“ A little fancy work ? ” suggested Fagin.

“ Ah ! something of that sort,” replied Noah. “ What do you think would suit me now ? Something not too trying for the strength, and not very dangerous, you know. That’s the sort of thing ! ”

“ What do you think of the old ladies ? ” asked Fagin. “ There’s a good deal of money made in snatching their bags and parcels, and running round the corner.”

“ Don’t they holler out a good deal, and scratch sometimes ? ” asked Noah, shaking his head. “ I don’t think that would answer my purpose. Ain’t there any other line open ? ”

“ Stop ! ” said Fagin, laying his hand on Noah’s knee. “ The kinchin lay.”

“ What’s that ? ” demanded Mr. Claypole.

“ The kinchins, my dear,” said Fagin, “ is the young children that’s sent on errands by their mothers, with sixpences and shillings ; and the lay is just to take their money away—they’ve always got it ready in their hands,—then knock ‘em into the kennel, and walk off very slow, as if there was nothing else the matter but a child fallen down and hurt itself. Ha ! ha ! ha ! ”

“ Ha ! ha ! ” roared Mr. Claypole, kicking up his legs in an ecstasy. “ That’s the very thing ! ”

“ To be sure it is,” replied Fagin ; “ and you can have a few good beats chalked out in Camden Town, and Battle Bridge, and neighbourhoods like that, where they’re always going errands ; and you can upset as many kinchins as you want, any hour in the day. Ha ! ha ! ha ! ”

With this, Fagin poked Mr. Claypole in the side, and they joined in a burst of laughter both long and loud.

“ Well, that’s all right ! ” said Noah, when he had

Oliver Twist

recovered himself, and Charlotte had returned. "What time to-morrow shall we say?"

"Will ten do?" asked Fagin, adding, as Mr. Claypole nodded assent: "What name shall I tell my good friend?"

"Mr. Bolter," replied Noah, who had prepared himself for such an emergency. "Mr. Morris Bolter. This is Mrs. Bolter."

"Mrs. Bolter's humble servant," said Fagin, bowing with grotesque politeness. "I hope I shall know her better very shortly."

"Do you hear the gentleman, Charlotte?" thundered Mr. Claypole.

"Yes, Noah, dear!" replied Mrs. Bolter, extending her hand.

"She calls me Noah, as a sort of fond way of talking," said Mr. Morris Bolter, late Claypole, turning to Fagin. "You understand?"

"Oh yes, I understand—perfectly," replied Fagin, telling the truth for once. "Good night! Good night!"

CHAPTER XXXV

"AND so it was you that was your own friend, was it?" asked Mr. Claypole, otherwise Bolter, when, by virtue of the compact entered into between them, he had removed next day to Fagin's house. "'Cod, I thought as much last night!"

"Every man's his own friend, my dear," replied Fagin.

"That's true," rejoined Mr. Bolter, thoughtfully. "Oh! yer a cunning old codger!"

Mr. Fagin saw, with delight, that this tribute to his powers was no mere compliment, but that he had really impressed his recruit with a sense of his wily genius, which it was most important that he should entertain in the outset of their acquaintance. To strengthen an impression so desirable and useful, he followed up the blow by acquainting him, in some detail, with the

Oliver Twist

magnitude and extent of his operations ; blending truth and fiction together, as best served his purpose ; and bringing both to bear, with so much art, that Mr. Bolter's respect visibly increased, and became tempered, at the same time, with a degree of wholesome fear, which it was highly desirable to awaken.

"It's this mutual trust we have in each other that consoles me under heavy losses," said Fagin. "My best hand was taken from me, yesterday morning."

"You don't mean to say he died ?" cried Mr. Bolter.

"No, no," replied Fagin, "not so bad as that. Not quite so bad."

"What, I suppose he was—"

"Wanted," interposed Fagin. "Yes, he was wanted."

"Very particular ?" inquired Mr. Bolter.

"No," replied Fagin, "not very. He was charged with attempting to pick a pocket, and they found a silver snuff-box on him,—his own, my dear, his own, for he took snuff himself, and was very fond of it. They remanded him till to-day, for they thought they knew the owner. Ah ! he was worth fifty boxes, and I'd give the price of as many to have him back. You should have known the Dodger, my dear ; you should have known the Dodger."

"Well, but I shall know him, I hope ; don't yer think so ?" said Mr. Bolter.

"I'm doubtful about it," replied Fagin, with a sigh. "If they don't get any fresh evidence, it'll only be a summary conviction, and we shall have him back again after six weeks or so ; but, if they do, it's a case of lagging. They know what a clever lad he is ; he'll be a lifer."

"What do yer mean by lagging and a lifer ?" demanded Mr. Bolter.

Fagin was about to translate these mysterious expressions into the vulgar tongue ; and, being interpreted, Mr. Bolter would have been informed that they represented that combination of words, "transportation for life," when the dialogue was cut short by the entry of Master Bates, with his hands in his breeches-pockets, and his face twisted into a look of semi-comical woe.

"It's all up, Fagin," said Charley, when he and his new companion had been made known to each other.

Oliver Twist

“ What do you mean ? ”

“ They’ve found the gentleman as owns the box ; two or three more’s a-coming to identify him ; and the Artful’s booked for a passage out,” replied Master Bates. “ I must have a full suit of mourning, Fagin, and a hat-band, to wisit him in, afore he sets out upon his travels. To think of Jack Dawkins—lummy Jack—the Dodger—the Artful Dodger—going abroad for a common two-penny-halfpenny sneeze-box ! I never thought he’d a done it under a gold watch, chain, and seals, at the lowest. Oh, why didn’t he rob some rich old gentleman of all his walables, and go out *as* a gentleman, and not like a common prig, without no honour nor glory ! ”

With this expression of feeling for his unfortunate friend, Master Bates sat himself on the nearest chair with an aspect of chagrin and despondency.

“ Never mind, Charley,” said Fagin soothingly. “ They’ll all know what a clever fellow he was ; he’ll show it himself, and not disgrace his old pals and teachers. Think how young he is too ! What a distinction, Charley, to be lagged at his time of life ! ”

“ Well, it is a honour, that is ! ” said Charley, a little consoled.

“ We must know how he gets on to-day, by some handy means or other,” said Fagin. “ Let me think.”

“ Shall I go ? ” asked Charley.

“ Not for the world,” replied Fagin. “ Are you mad, my dear, stark mad, that you’d walk into the very place where—No, Charley, no. One is enough to lose at a time.”

“ You don’t mean to go yourself, I suppose ? ” said Charley, with a humorous leer.

“ That wouldn’t quite fit,” replied Fagin, shaking his head.

“ Then why don’t you send this new cove ? ” asked Master Bates, laying his hand on Noah’s arm. “ Nobody knows him.”

“ Why, if he didn’t mind—” observed Fagin.

“ Mind ! ” interposed Charley. “ What should *he* have to mind ? ”

“ Really nothing, my dear,” said Fagin, turning to Mr. Bolter, “ really nothing.”

Oliver Twist

"Oh, I dare say about that, yer know," observed Noah, backing towards the door, and shaking his head with a kind of sober alarm. "No, no—none of that. It's not in my department, that ain't."

"Wot department has he got, Fagin?" inquired Master Bates, surveying Noah's lank form with much disgust. "The cutting away when there's anything wrong, and the eating all the wittles when there's everything right; is that his branch?"

"Never mind," retorted Mr. Bolter; "and don't yer take liberties with yer superiors, little boy, or yer'll find yerself in the wrong shop."

Master Bates laughed so vehemently at this magnificent threat, that it was some time before Fagin could interpose, and represent to Mr. Bolter that he incurred no possible danger in visiting the police-office; that, inasmuch as no account of the little affair in which he had been engaged, nor any description of his person, had yet been forwarded to the metropolis, it was very probable that he was not even suspected of having resorted to it for shelter.

Persuaded, in part, by these representations, but overcome in a much greater degree by his fear of Fagin, Mr. Bolter at length consented, with a very bad grace, to undertake the expedition. By Fagin's directions, he immediately substituted for his own attire, a waggoner's frock, velveten breeches, and leather leggings: all of which articles the Jew had at hand. He was likewise furnished with a felt hat well garnished with turnpike tickets; and a carter's whip. Thus equipped, he was to saunter into the office, as some country fellow from Covent Garden market might be supposed to do for the gratification of his curiosity.

These arrangements completed, he was informed of the necessary signs and tokens by which to recognise the Artful Dodger, and was conveyed by Master Bates through dark and winding ways to within a very short distance of Bow Street. Having described the precise situation of the office, and accompanied it with copious directions how he was to walk straight up the passage, and when he got into the yard take the door up the steps on the right-hand side, and pull off his hat as he

Oliver Twist

went into the room, Charley Bates bade him hurry on alone, and promised to bide his return on the spot of their parting.

Noah Claypole, or Morris Bolter as the reader pleases, punctually followed the directions he had received, which were so exact that he was enabled to gain the magisterial presence without asking any question, or meeting with any interruption by the way. He found himself jostled among a crowd of people, chiefly women, who were huddled together in a dirty, frowsy room, at the upper end of which was a raised platform railed off from the rest, with a dock for the prisoners on the left hand against the wall, a box for the witnesses in the middle, and a desk for the magistrates on the right.

There were only a couple of women in the dock, who were nodding to their admiring friends, while the clerk read some depositions to a couple of policemen and a man in plain clothes who leant over the table. A jailer stood reclining against the dock-rail, tapping his nose listlessly with a large key, except when he repressed an undue tendency to conversation among the idlers, by proclaiming silence; or looked sternly up to bid some woman "Take that baby out," when the gravity of justice was disturbed by feeble cries, half-smothered in the mother's shawl, from some meagre infant.

Noah looked eagerly about him for the Dodger; but nobody at all answering the description given him of Mr. Dawkins was to be seen. He waited in a state of much suspense and uncertainty until the women, being committed for trial, went flaunting out; and then was quickly relieved by the appearance of another prisoner who he felt at once could be no other than the object of his visit.

It was indeed Mr. Dawkins, who, shuffling into the office with the big coat sleeves tucked up as usual, his left hand in his pocket, and his hat in his right hand, preceded the jailer, with a rolling gait altogether indescribable, and, taking his place in the dock, requested in an audible voice to know what he was placed in that 'ere disgraceful sitivation for.

"Hold your tongue, will you?" said the jailer.

Oliver Twist

"I'm an Englishman, ain't I?" rejoined the Dodger.
"Where are my privileges?"

"You'll get your privileges soon enough," retorted the jailer, "and pepper with 'em."

"We'll see wot the Secretary of State for the Home Affairs has got to say to the beaks, if I don't," replied Mr. Dawkins. "Now then! Wot is this here business? I shall thank the madg'strates to dispose of this here little affair, and not to keep me while they read the paper, for I've got an appointment with a genelman in the City, and as I'm a man of my word and very punctual in business matters, he'll go away if I ain't there to my time, and then pr'aps there won't be an action for damage against them as kep me away. Oh no, certainly not!"

At this point, the Dodger, with a show of being very particular with a view to proceedings to be had thereafter, desired the jailer to communicate "the names of them two files as was on the bench." Which so tickled the spectators, that they laughed almost as heartily as Master Bates could have done if he had heard the request.

"Silence there!" cried the jailer.

"What is this?" inquired one of the magistrates.

"A pick-pocketing case, your worship."

"Has the boy ever been here before?"

"He ought to have been, a many times," replied the jailer. "He has been pretty well everywhere else. I know him well, your worship."

"Oh! you know me, do you?" cried the Artful, making a note of the statement. "Very good. That's a case of deformation of character, any way."

Here there was another laugh, and another cry of silence.

"Now then, where are the witnesses?" said the clerk.

"Ah! that's right," added the Dodger. "Where are they? I should like to see 'em."

This wish was immediately gratified, for a policeman stepped forward who had seen the prisoner attempt the pocket of an unknown gentleman in a crowd, and indeed take a handkerchief therefrom, which, being a very old one, he deliberately put back again, after trying it on his own countenance. For this reason, he took the

Oliver Twist

Dodger into custody as soon as he could get near him, and the said Dodger, being searched, had upon his person a silver snuff-box, with the owner's name engraved upon the lid. This gentleman had been discovered on reference to the Court Guide, and being then and there present, swore that the snuff-box was his, and that he had missed it on the previous day, the moment he had disengaged himself from the crowd before referred to. He had also remarked a young gentleman in the throng, particularly active in making his way about, and that young gentleman was the prisoner before him.

"Have you anything to ask this witness, boy?" said the magistrate.

"I wouldn't abase myself by descending to hold no conversation with him," replied the Dodger.

"Have you anything to say at all?"

"Do you hear his worship ask if you've anything to say?" inquired the jailer, nudging the silent Dodger with his elbow.

"I beg your pardon," said the Dodger, looking up with an air of abstraction. "Did you redress yourself to me, my man?"

"I never see such an out-and-out young wagabond, your worship," observed the officer with a grin. "Do you mean to say anything, you young shaver?"

"No," replied the Dodger, "not here, for this ain't the shop for justice; besides which, my attorney is a-breakfasting this morning with the Wice President of the House of Commons; but I shall have something to say elsewhere, and so will he, and so will a very numerous and 'spectable circle of acquaintance as'll make them beaks wish they'd never been born, or that they'd got their footmen to hang 'em up to their own hat-pegs, afore they let 'em come out this morning to try it on upon me. I'll—"

"There! He's fully committed!" interposed the clerk. "Take him away."

"Come on," said the jailer.

"Oh ah! I'll come on," replied the Dodger, brushing his hat with the palm of his hand. "Ah! (to the Bench) it's no use your looking frightened; I won't show you no mercy, not a ha'porth of it. You'll pay for this, my

Oliver Twist

fine fellers. I wouldn't be you for something ! I wouldn't go free, now, if you was to fall down on your knees and ask me. Here, carry me off to prison ! Take me away ! ”

With these last words, the Dodger suffered himself to be led off by the collar ; threatening, till he got into the yard, to make a parliamentary business of it ; and then grinning in the officer's face, with great glee and self-approval.

Having seen him locked up by himself in a little cell, Noah made the best of his way back to where he had left Master Bates. The two hastened back together, to bear to Mr. Fagin the animating news that the Dodger was doing full justice to his bringing-up, and establishing for himself a glorious reputation.

CHAPTER XXXVI

ADEPT as she was, in all the arts of cunning and disimulation, the girl Nancy could not wholly conceal the effect which the knowledge of the step she had taken, wrought upon her mind. She remembered that both the crafty Jew and the brutal Sikes had confided to her schemes, which had been hidden from all others : in the full confidence that she was trustworthy and beyond the reach of their suspicion. Vile as those schemes were, desperate as were their originators, and bitter as were her feelings towards Fagin, who had led her, step by step, deeper and deeper down into an abyss of crime and misery, whence was no escape ; still, there were times when, even towards him, she felt some relenting, lest her disclosure should bring him within the iron grasp he had so long eluded, and he should fall at last—richly as he merited such a fate—by her hand.

Her fears for Sikes would have been more powerful inducements to recoil while there was yet time ; but she had stipulated that her secret should be rigidly kept, she had dropped no clue which could lead to his discovery, she had refused, even for his sake, a refuge from all the

Oliver Twist

guilt and wretchedness that encompassed her—and what more could she do? She was resolved.

It was Sunday night, and the bell of the nearest church struck the hour. Sikes and the Jew were talking, but they paused to listen. The girl looked up from the low seat on which she crouched, and listened too. Eleven.

"An hour this side of midnight," said Sikes, raising the blind to look out and returning to his seat. "Dark and heavy it is too. A good night for business this."

"Ah!" replied Fagin. "What a pity, Bill, my dear, that there's none quite ready to be done."

"You're right for once," replied Sikes gruffly. "It is a pity, for I'm in the humour too."

Fagin sighed, and shook his head despondingly.

"We must make up for lost time when we've got things into a good train. That's all I know," said Sikes.

"That's the way to talk, my dear," replied Fagin, venturing to pat him on the shoulder. "It does me good to hear you."

Nancy had taken advantage of the conversation to put on her bonnet, and was now leaving the room.

"Hallo!" cried Sikes. "Nance. Where's the gal going to at this time of night?"

"Not far."

"What answer's that?" returned Sikes. "Where are you going?"

"I say, not far."

"And I say where?" retorted Sikes. "Do you hear me?"

"I don't know where," replied the girl.

"Then I do," said Sikes, more in the spirit of obstinacy than because he had any real objection to the girl going where she listed. "Nowhere. Sit down."

"I'm not well. I told you that before," rejoined the girl. "I want a breath of air."

"Put your head out of the window," replied Sikes.

"There's not enough there," said the girl. "I want it in the street."

"Then you won't have it," replied Sikes. With which assurance he rose, locked the door, took the key out, and pulling her bonnet from her head, flung it up to the

Oliver Twist

top of an old press. "There," said the robber. "Now stop quietly where you are, will you?"

"It's not such a matter as a bonnet would keep me," said the girl turning very pale. "What do you mean, Bill? Do you know what you're doing?"

"Know what I'm—Oh!" cried Sikes turning to Fagin, "she's out of her senses, you know, or she daren't talk to me in that way."

"Tell him to let me go, Fagin. He had better. It'll be better for him. Do you hear me?" cried Nancy, stamping her foot upon the ground.

"Hear you!" repeated Sikes, turning round in his chair to confront her. "Ay! I hear you. Wot has come over you, you jade? Wot is it?"

"Let me go," said the girl, with great earnestness; then sitting herself down on the floor, before the door, she said, "Bill, let me go; you don't know what you are doing. You don't, indeed. For only one hour—do—do!"

"Cut my limbs off one by one!" cried Sikes, seizing her roughly by the arm, "if I don't think the gal's stark raving mad. Get up."

"Not till you let me go—not till you let me go—never—never!" screamed the girl. Sikes looked on, for a minute, watching his opportunity, and suddenly pinioning her hands, dragged her, struggling and wrestling with him by the way, into a small room adjoining, where he sat himself on a bench, and thrusting her into a chair, held her down by force. She struggled and implored by turns until twelve o'clock had struck, and then, wearied and exhausted, ceased to contest the point any further. With a caution, backed by many oaths, to make no more efforts to go out that night, Sikes left her to recover at leisure.

Fagin had conceived the idea—not from what had just passed, though that had tended to confirm him, but slowly and by degrees—that Nancy, wearied of the house-breaker's brutality, had made some new friends. Her altered manner, her repeated absences from home alone, her comparative indifference to the interests of the gang for which she had once been so zealous, and, added to these, her desperate impatience to leave home that night

Oliver Twist

at a particular hour, all favoured the supposition, and rendered it, to him at least, almost matter of certainty.

The old man was up, betimes, next morning, and waited impatiently for the appearance of his new associate, who after a delay that seemed interminable, at length presented himself, and commenced a voracious assault on the breakfast.

“ Bolter,” said Fagin, drawing up a chair and seating himself opposite Morris Bolter.

“ Well, here I am,” returned Noah. “ What’s the matter? Where’s Charlotte? ”

“ Out,” said Fagin. “ I sent her out this morning with the other young woman, because I wanted us to be alone.”

“ Oh! ” said Noah. “ I wish yer’d ordered her to make some buttered toast first. Well. Talk away. Yer won’t interrupt me.”

“ You did well yesterday, my dear,” said Fagin. “ Beautiful! Six shillings and ninepence halfpenny on the very first day! The kinchin lay will be a fortune to you.”

“ Pretty well, I think, for a beginner,” remarked Mr. Bolter complacently, and took a series of large bites, which finished his first hunk of bread and butter, and assisted himself to a second.

“ I want you, Bolter,” said Fagin, leaning over the table, “ to do a piece of work for me, my dear, that needs great care and caution.”

“ I say,” rejoined Bolter, “ don’t yer go shoving me into danger, or sending me to any more o’ yer police-offices. That don’t suit me, that don’t; and so I tell yer.”

“ There’s not the smallest danger in it—not the very smallest,” said the Jew; “ it’s only to dodge a woman.”

“ An old woman? ” demanded Mr. Bolter.

“ A young one,” replied Fagin.

“ I can do that pretty well, I know,” said Bolter. “ What am I to dodge her for? Not to—”

“ Not to do anything, but to tell me where she goes, who she sees, and, if possible, what she says to remember the street, if it is a street, or the house, if it is a house; and to bring me back all the information you can.”

Oliver Twist

“ Who is she ? ” inquired Noah.

“ One of us.”

“ Oh Lor ! ” cried Noah, curling up his nose. “ Yer doubtful of her, are yer ? ”

“ She has found out some new friends, my dear, and I must know who they are,” replied Fagin.

“ I see,” said Noah. “ Just to have the pleasure of knowing them, if they’re respectable people, eh ? Ha ! ha ! ha ! I’m your man.”

“ I knew you would be,” cried Fagin, elated by the success of his proposal.

“ Of course, of course,” replied Noah. “ Where is she ? Where am I to wait for her ? Where am I to go ? ”

“ All that, my dear, you shall hear from me. I’ll point her out at the proper time,” said Fagin. “ You keep ready, and leave the rest to me.”

That night, and the next, and the next again, the spy sat booted and equipped in his carter’s dress : ready to turn out at a word from Fagin. Six nights passed—six long weary nights—and on each, Fagin came home with a disappointed face, and briefly intimated that it was not yet time. On the seventh, he returned earlier, and with an exultation he could not conceal. It was Sunday.

“ She goes abroad to-night,” said Fagin, “ and on the right errand, I’m sure ; for she has been alone all day, and the man she is afraid of, will not be back much before daybreak. Come with me. Quick ! ”

Noah started up without saying a word ; for the Jew was in a state of such intense excitement that it infected him. They left the house stealthily, and, hurrying through a labyrinth of streets, arrived at length before a public-house, which Noah recognised as the same in which he had slept, on the night of his arrival in London.

It was past eleven o’clock, and the door was closed. It opened softly on its hinges as Fagin gave a low whistle. They entered, without noise ; and the door was closed behind them.

Scarcely venturing to whisper, but substituting dumb show for words, Fagin, and the young Jew who had admitted them, pointed out the pane of glass to Noah,

Oliver Twist

and signed to him to climb up and observe the person in the adjoining room.

“ Is that the woman ? ” he asked, scarcely above his breath.

Fagin nodded yes.

“ I should know her among a thousand,” cried the spy.

He hastily descended, as the room-door opened, and the girl came out. Fagin drew him behind a small partition which was curtained off, and they held their breaths as she passed within a few feet of their place of concealment, and emerged by the door at which they had entered.

“ Hist ! ” cried the lad who held the door. “ Dow.”

Noah exchanged a look with Fagin, and darted out.

“ To the left,” whispered the lad ; “ take the left lad, and keep od the other side.”

He did so ; and, by the light of the lamps, saw the girl’s retreating figure, already at some distance before him. He advanced as near as he considered prudent, and kept on the opposite side of the street, the better to observe her motions. She looked nervously round, twice or thrice, and once stopped to let two men who were following close behind her, pass on. She seemed to gather courage as she advanced, and to walk with a steadier and firmer step. The spy preserved the same relative distance between them, and followed : with his eye upon her.

CHAPTER XXXVII

THE church clocks chimed three quarters past eleven, as two figures emerged on London Bridge. One, which advanced with a swift and rapid step, was that of a woman who looked eagerly about her as though in quest of some expected object ; the other figure was that of a man, who slunk along in the deepest shadow he could find, and, at some distance, accommodated his pace to hers : stopping when she stopped : and as she moved

Oliver Twist

again, creeping stealthily on : but never allowing himself, in the ardour of his pursuit, to gain upon her footsteps.

It was a very dark night. The day had been unfavourable, and at that hour and place there were few people stirring. Such as there were, hurried quickly past : very possibly without seeing, but certainly without noticing, either the woman, or the man who kept her in view.

The girl had taken a few restless turns to and fro—closely watched meanwhile by her hidden observer—when the heavy bell of St. Paul's tolled for the death of another day. Midnight had come upon the crowded city. The hour had not struck two minutes, when a young lady, accompanied by a grey-haired gentleman, alighted from a hackney-carriage within a short distance of the bridge, and, having dismissed the vehicle, walked straight towards it. They had scarcely set foot upon its pavement, when the girl started, and immediately made towards them.

They walked onward, looking about them with the air of persons who entertained some very slight expectation which had little chance of being realised, when they were suddenly joined by this new associate. They halted with an exclamation of surprise, but suppressed it immediately ; for a man in the garments of a countryman came close up—brushed against them, indeed—at that precise moment.

“ Not here,” said Nancy hurriedly, “ I am afraid to speak to you here. Come away—out of the public road —down the steps yonder ! ”

As she uttered these words, and indicated, with her hand, the direction in which she wished them to proceed, the countryman looked round, and roughly asking what they took up the whole pavement for, passed on.

The steps to which the girl had pointed, were those which, on the Surrey bank, and on the same side of the bridge as Saint Saviour’s Church, form a landing-stairs from the river. To this spot, the man bearing the appearance of a countryman, hastened unobserved ; and after a moment’s survey of the place, he began to descend.

These stairs are a part of the bridge ; they consist of three flights. Just below the end of the second, going

Oliver Twist

down, the stone wall on the left terminates in an ornamental pilaster facing towards the Thames. At this point the lower steps widen: so that a person turning that angle of the wall, is necessarily unseen by any others on the stairs who chance to be above him, if only a step. The countryman looked hastily round, when he reached this point; and as there seemed no better place of concealment, and, the tide being out, there was plenty of room, he slipped aside, with his back to the pilaster, and there waited.

So tardily stole the time in this lonely place, and so eager was the spy to penetrate the motives of an interview so different from what he had been led to expect, that he more than once gave the matter up for lost, and persuaded himself, either that they had stopped far above, or had resorted to some entirely different spot to hold their mysterious conversation. He was on the point of emerging from his hiding-place, and regaining the road above, when he heard the sound of footsteps, and directly afterwards of voices almost close at his ear.

He drew himself straight upright against the wall, and, scarcely breathing, listened attentively.

"This is far enough," said a voice, which was evidently that of the gentleman. "You were not here last Sunday night."

"I couldn't come," replied Nancy; "I was kept by force."

"You were not suspected of holding any communication with anybody on the subject which has brought us here to-night, I hope?" asked the old gentleman.

"No," replied the girl, shaking her head. "It's not very easy for me to leave him unless he knows why; I couldn't have seen the lady when I did, but that I gave him a drink of laudanum before I came away."

"Did he awake before you returned?" inquired the gentleman.

"No; and neither he nor any of them suspect me."

"Good," said the gentleman. "Now listen to me. This young lady has communicated to me, and to some other friends who can be safely trusted, what you told her nearly a fortnight since. I confess to you that I

Oliver Twist

had doubts, at first, whether you were to be implicitly relied upon, but now I firmly believe you are."

"I am," said the girl earnestly.

"I repeat that I firmly believe it. To prove to you that I am disposed to trust you, I tell you without reserve, that we propose to extort the secret, whatever it may be, from the fears of this man Monks. But if—" said the gentleman—"he cannot be secured, or, if secured, cannot be acted upon as we wish, you must deliver up the Jew."

"Fagin," cried the girl, recoiling.

"That man must be delivered up by you," said the gentleman.

"I will not do it! I will never do it!" replied the girl. "There are many of us who have kept the same courses together, and I'll not turn upon them, who might—any of them—have turned upon me, but didn't, bad as they are."

"Then," said the gentleman, quickly, as if this had been the point he had been aiming to attain; "put Monks into my hands, and leave him to me to deal with."

"What if he turns against the others?"

"I promise you that in that case, if the truth is forced from him, there the matter will rest; there must be circumstances in Oliver's little history which it would be painful to drag before the public eye, and if the truth is once elicited, they shall go scot free."

"And if it is not?" suggested the girl.

"Then," pursued the gentleman, "this Fagin shall not be brought to justice without your consent. In such a case I could show you reasons, I think, which would induce you to yield it."

"Have I the lady's promise for that?" asked the girl.

"You have," replied Rose. "My true and faithful pledge."

"Monks would never learn how you knew what you do?" said the girl, after a short pause.

"Never," replied the gentleman. "The intelligence should be so brought to bear upon him, that he could never even guess."

"I have been a liar, and among liars from a little

Oliver Twist

child," said the girl after another interval of silence "but I will take your words."

After receiving an assurance from both, that she might safely do so, she proceeded to describe, by name and situation, the public-house whence she had been followed that night. From the manner in which she occasionally paused, it appeared as if the gentleman were making some hasty notes of the information she communicated. When she had thoroughly explained the localities of the place, and the night and hour on which Monks was most in the habit of frequenting it, she seemed to consider for a few moments, for the purpose of recalling his features and appearance more forcibly to her recollection.

"He is tall," said the girl, "and a strongly made man, but not stout; he has a lurking walk; and as he walks, constantly looks over his shoulder, first on one side, and then on the other. Don't forget that, for his eyes are sunk in his head so much deeper than any other man's, that you might almost tell him by that alone. His face is dark, like his hair and eyes; and, although he can't be more than six or eight and twenty, withered and haggard. His lips are often discoloured and disfigured with the marks of teeth; for he has desperate fits, and sometimes even bites his hands and covers them with wounds. Upon his throat: so high that you can see a part of it below his neckerchief when he turns his face: there is—"

"A broad red mark, like a burn or scald?" cried the gentleman.

"How's this?" said the girl. "You know him!"

"I think I do," said the gentleman, breaking silence. "I should by your description. We shall see. Many people are singularly like each other. It may not be the same."

As he expressed himself to this effect, with assumed carelessness, he took a step or two nearer the concealed spy, as the latter could tell from the distinctness with which he heard him mutter, "It must be he!"

"Now," he said, returning: so it seemed by the sound: to the spot where he had stood before, "you have given us most valuable assistance, young woman,

Oliver Twist

and I wish you to be the better for it. What can I do to serve you?"

"Nothing," replied Nancy.

"You will not persist in saying that," rejoined the gentleman, with a voice and emphasis of kindness that might have touched a much harder and more obdurate heart. "Think now. Tell me."

"Nothing, sir," rejoined the girl, weeping. "You can do nothing to help me. I am past all hope, indeed."

"You put yourself beyond its pale," said the gentleman. "The past has been a dreary waste with you, of youthful energies mis-spent; but, for the future, you may hope. I do not say that it is in our power to offer you peace of heart and mind, for that must come as you seek it; but a quiet refuge, either in England, or, if you fear to remain here, in some foreign country, it is not only within the compass of our ability but our most anxious wish to secure you. Before the dawn of morning, you shall be placed entirely beyond the reach of your former associates. Come! I would not have you go back to exchange one word with any old companion. Quit them all, while there is time and opportunity!"

"She will be persuaded now," cried the young lady. "She hesitates, I am sure."

"I fear not, my dear," said the gentleman.

"No, sir, I do not," replied the girl, after a short struggle. "I am chained to my old life. I loathe and hate it now, but I cannot leave it. I must go home."

"Home!" repeated the young lady, with great stress upon the word.

"Home, lady," rejoined the girl. "To such a home as I have raised for myself with the work of my whole life. Let us part. I shall be watched or seen. Go! Go! If I have done you any service, all I ask is, that you leave me, and let me go my way alone."

"It is useless," said the gentleman, with a sigh. "We compromise her safety, perhaps, by staying here. We may have detained her longer than she expected already."

"Yes, yes," urged the girl. "You have."

"This purse," cried the young lady. "Take it for my sake, that you may have some resource in an hour of need and trouble."

Oliver Twist

"No!" replied the girl. "I have not done this for money. Let me have that to think of. And yet—give me something that you have worn: I should like to have something—no, no, not a ring—your gloves or handkerchief—anything that I can keep, as having belonged to you, sweet lady. There. Bless you! God bless you. Good night, good night!"

The violent agitation of the girl, and the apprehension of some discovery which would subject her to ill-usage and violence, seemed to determine the gentleman to leave her, as she requested. The sound of retreating footsteps was audible, and the voices ceased.

The two figures of the young lady and her companion soon afterwards appeared upon the bridge. They stopped at the summit of the stairs.

"Hark!" cried the young lady, listening. "Did she call? I thought I heard her voice."

"No, my love," replied Mr. Brownlow, looking sadly back. "She has not moved, and will not till we are gone."

Rose Maylie lingered, but the old gentleman drew her arm through his, and led her, with gentle force, away. As they disappeared, the girl sank down nearly at her full length upon one of the stone stairs, and vented the anguish of her heart in bitter tears.

After a time she arose, and with feeble and tottering steps ascended to the street. The astonished listener remained motionless on his post for some minutes afterwards, and having ascertained, with many cautious glances round him, that he was again alone, crept slowly from his hiding-place, and returned, stealthily and in the shade of the wall, in the same manner as he had descended.

Peeping out, more than once, when he reached the top, to make sure that he was unobserved, Noah Claypole darted away at his utmost speed, and made for the Jew's house as fast as his legs would carry him.

Oliver Twist

CHAPTER XXXVIII

IT was nearly two hours before day-break ; that time which, in the autumn of the year, may be truly called the dead of night ; when the streets are silent and deserted ; when even sounds appear to slumber, and profligacy and riot have staggered home to dream ; it was at this still and silent hour, that Fagin sat watching in his old lair, with face so distorted and pale, and eyes so red and bloodshot, that he looked less like a man, than like some hideous phantom.

Stretched upon a mattress on the floor, lay Noah Claypole, fast asleep. Towards him the old man sometimes directed his eyes for an instant, and then brought them back again to the candle ; which with a long-burnt wick drooping almost double, and hot grease falling down in clots upon the table, plainly showed that his thoughts were busy elsewhere.

He sat without changing his attitude in the least, or appearing to take the smallest heed of time, until his quick ear seemed to be attracted by a footstep in the street.

“At last,” he muttered, wiping his dry and fevered mouth. “At last !”

The bell rang gently as he spoke. He crept upstairs to the door, and presently returned accompanied by a man muffled to the chin, who carried a bundle under one arm. Sitting down and throwing back his outer coat, the man displayed the burly frame of Sikes.

“There !” he said, laying the bundle on the table. “Take care of that, and do the most you can with it. It’s been trouble enough to get ; I thought I should have been here, three hours ago.”

Fagin laid his hand upon the bundle, and locking it in the cupboard, sat down again without speaking. But he did not take his eyes off the robber, for an instant, during this action ; and now that they sat over against each other, face to face, he looked fixedly at him, with his lips quivering so violently, and his face so altered by the emotions which had mastered him, that the

Oliver Twist

housebreaker involuntarily drew back his chair, and surveyed him with a look of real affright.

“ Wot now ? ” cried Sikes. “ Wot do you look at a man so for ? ”

Fagin raised his right hand, and shook his trembling forefinger in the air ; but his passion was so great, that the power of speech was for the moment gone.

“ He’s gone mad,” said Sikes, feeling in his breast with a look of alarm. “ I must look to myself here.”

“ No, no,” rejoined Fagin, finding his voice. “ It’s not—you’re not the person, Bill. I’ve no—no fault to find with you.”

“ Oh, you haven’t, haven’t you ? ” said Sikes, looking sternly at him, and ostentatiously passing a pistol into a more convenient pocket. “ That’s lucky—for one of us. Which one that is, don’t matter.”

“ I’ve got that to tell you, Bill,” said Fagin, drawing his chair nearer, “ will make you worse than me.”

“ Ay ? ” returned the robber with an incredulous air. “ Tell away ! Look sharp, or Nance will think I’m lost.”

“ Lost ! ” cried Fagin. “ She has pretty well settled that, in her own mind, already.”

“ Wot d’ye mean ? ” asked Sikes.

Fagin looked hard at the robber ; and, motioning him to be silent, stooped over the bed upon the floor, and shook the sleeper to rouse him.

“ Bolter, Bolter ! Poor lad ! ” said Fagin, looking up with an expression of devilish anticipation, and speaking slowly and with marked emphasis. “ He’s tired—tired with watching for *her* so long,—watching for *her*, Bill.”

When his assumed name had been repeated several times, Noah rubbed his eyes, and, giving a heavy yawn, looked sleepily about him.

“ Tell me that again—once again, just for him to hear,” said the Jew, pointing to Sikes as he spoke.

“ Tell yer what ? ” asked the sleepy Noah, shaking himself pettishly.

“ That about—NANCY,” said Fagin, clutching Sikes by the wrist, as if to prevent his leaving the house before he had heard enough. “ You followed her ? ”

“ Yes.”

“ To London Bridge ? ”

Oliver Twist

“ Yes.”

“ Where she met two people ? ”

“ So she did.”

“ A gentleman and a lady that she had gone to of her own accord before, who asked her to give up all her pals, and Monks first, which she did—and to describe him, which she did—and to tell her what house it was that we meet at, and go to, which she did—and where it could be best watched from, which she did—and what time the people went there, which she did. She did all this. She told it all every word without a threat, without a murmur—she did—did she not ? ” cried Fagin, half mad with fury.

“ All right,” replied Noah, scratching his head. “ That’s just what it was ! ”

“ What did they say, about last Sunday ? ”

“ They asked her,” said Noah, “ why she didn’t come, last Sunday, as she promised. She said she couldn’t.”

“ Why—why ? Tell him that.”

“ Because she was forcibly kept at home by Bill,” replied Noah.

“ What more of him ? ” cried Fagin. “ Tell him that, tell him that.”

“ Why, that she couldn’t very easily get out of doors unless he knew where she was going to,” said Noah ; “ and so the first time she went to see the lady, she gave him a drink of laudanum.”

“ Hell’s fire ! ” cried Sikes, breaking fiercely from the Jew. “ Let me go ! ”

Flinging the old man from him, he rushed from the room, darted, wildly and furiously, up the stairs, and dashed into the silent streets.

Without one pause, or moment’s consideration ; without once turning his head to the right or left, or raising his eyes to the sky, or lowering them to the ground, but looking straight before him with savage resolution, the robber held on his headlong course, nor muttered a word, nor relaxed a muscle, until he reached his own door. He opened it, softly, with a key ; strode lightly up the stairs ; and entering his own room, double-locked the door, and lifting a heavy table against it, drew back the curtain of the bed.

Oliver Twist

The girl was lying, half-dressed, upon it. He had roused her from her sleep, for she raised herself with a hurried and startled look.

“Get up!” said the man.

“It *is* you, Bill!” said the girl, with an expression of pleasure at his return.

“It *is*,” was the reply. “Get up.”

There was a candle burning, but the man hastily drew it from the candlestick, and hurled it under the grate. Seeing the faint light of early day without, the girl rose to undraw the curtain.

“Let it be,” said Sikes, thrusting his hand before her. “There’s light enough for wot I’ve got to do.”

“Bill,” said the girl, in the low voice of alarm, “why do you look like that at me!”

The robber sat regarding her, for a few seconds, and then, grasping her by the head and throat, dragged her into the middle of the room.

“Bill, Bill!” gasped the girl, wrestling with the strength of mortal fear, “tell me what I have done!”

“You know!” returned the robber, suppressing his breath. “You were watched to-night; every word you said was heard.”

“Then spare my life for the love of Heaven, as I spared yours,” rejoined the girl, clinging to him. “Bill, dear Bill, you cannot have the heart to kill me. Oh! think of all I have given up, only this one night, for you. You *shall* have time to think, and save yourself this crime; I will not loose my hold, you cannot throw me off. Bill, Bill, for dear God’s sake, for your own, for mine, stop before you spill my blood! I have been true to you, upon my guilty soul I have!”

The man struggled violently, to release his arms; but those of the girl were clasped round his, and he could not tear them away.

“Bill,” cried the girl, striving to lay her head upon his breast, “the gentleman, and that dear lady, told me to-night of a home in some foreign country where I could end my days in solitude and peace. Let me see them again, and beg them, on my knees, to show the same mercy and goodness to you; and let us both leave this dreadful place, and far apart lead better lives, and

Oliver Twist

never see each other more. It is never too late to repent. They told me so—I feel it now—but we must have time—a little, little time ! ”

The housebreaker freed one arm, and grasped his pistol. The certainty of immediate detection if he fired, flashed across his mind even in the midst of his fury ; and he beat it twice with all the force he could summon, upon the upturned face that almost touched his own.

She staggered and fell : nearly blinded with the blood that rained down from a deep gash in her forehead ; but raising herself, with difficulty, on her knees, drew from her bosom a white handkerchief—Rose Maylie’s own—and holding it up, in her folded hands, as high towards Heaven as her feeble strength would allow, breathed one prayer for mercy to her Maker.

Sikes staggering backward to the wall, and shutting out the sight with his hand, seized a heavy club and struck her down.

CHAPTER XXXIX

THE sun—the bright sun, that brings back, not light alone, but new life, and hope, and freshness to man—burst upon the crowded city in clear and radiant glory. Through costly-coloured glass and paper-mended window, through cathedral dome and rotten crevice, it shed its equal ray. It lighted up the room where the murdered woman lay. It did. He tried to shut it out, but it would stream in.

He struck a light, kindled a fire, and thrust the club into it. He held the weapon till it broke, and then piled it on the coals to burn away, and smoulder into ashes. He washed himself, and rubbed his clothes ; there were spots that would not be removed, but he cut the pieces out, and burned them.

Such preparations completed, he moved, backward, towards the door, dragging the dog with him. He shut

Oliver Twist

the door softly, locked it, took the key, and left the house.

He went through Islington ; strode up the hill at Highgate on which stands the stone in honour of Whittington ; turned down to Highgate Hill, unsteady of purpose, and uncertain where to go ; struck off to the right again, almost as soon as he began to descend it ; and taking the foot-path across the fields, skirted Caen Wood, and so came out on Hampstead Heath. Traversing the hollow by the Vale of Health, he mounted the opposite bank, and crossing the road which joins the villages of Hampstead and Highgate, made along the remaining portion of the heath to the fields at North End, in one of which he laid himself down under a hedge, and slept.

Soon he was up again, and away,—not far into the country, but back towards London by the high-road—then back again—then over another part of the same ground as he already traversed—then wandering up and down in fields, and lying on ditches' brinks to rest, and starting up to make for some other spot, and do the same, and ramble on again.

He wandered over miles and miles of ground. Morning and noon had passed, and the day was on the wane, and still he rambled to and fro, and up and down, and round and round, and still lingered about the same spot. At last he got away, and shaped his course for Hatfield.

It was nine o'clock at night, when the man, quite tired out, and the dog, limping and lame from the unaccustomed exercise, turned down the hill by the church of the quiet village, and plodding along the little street, crept into a small public-house, whose scanty light had guided them to the spot. There was a fire in the tap-room, and some country-labourers were drinking before it. They made room for the stranger, but he sat down in the farthest corner, and ate and drank alone, or rather with his dog : to whom he cast a morsel of food from time to time.

The robber, after paying his reckoning, sat silent and unnoticed in his corner, and had almost dropped asleep, when he was half wakened by the noisy entrance of a new-comer.

This was an antic fellow, half ~~pedlar and half mounte~~.

Oliver Twist

bank, who travelled about the country on foot to vend hones, strops, razors, washballs, harness-paste, medicine for dogs and horses, cheap perfumery, cosmetics, and such-like wares, which he carried in a case slung to his back. His entrance was the signal for various homely jokes with the countrymen, which slackened not until he had made his supper, and opened his box of treasures, when he ingeniously contrived to unite business with amusement.

"And what be that stoof? Good to eat, Harry?" asked a grinning countryman, pointing to some composition-cakes in one corner.

"This," said the fellow, producing one, "this is the infallible and invaluable composition for removing all sorts of stain, rust, dirt, mildew, spick, speck, spot, or spatter, from silk, satin, linen, cambric, cloth, crape, stuff, carpet, merino, muslin, bombazeen, or woollen stuff. Wine-stains, fruit-stains, beer-stains, water-stains, paint-stains, pitch-stains, any stains, all come out at one rub with the infallible and invaluable composition. One penny a square. With all these virtues, one penny a square!"

There were two buyers directly, and more of the listeners plainly hesitated. The vendor observing this, increased in loquacity.

"It's all bought up as fast as it can be made," said the fellow. "There are fourteen water-mills, six steam-engines, and a galvanic battery, always a-working upon it, and they can't make it fast enough, though the men work so hard that they die off, and the widows is pensioned directly, with twenty pound a-year for each of the children, and a premium of fifty for twins. One penny a square! Two halfpence is all the same, and four farthings is received with joy. One penny a square! Wine-stains, fruit-stains, beer-stains, water-stains, paint-stains, pitch-stains, mud-stains, blood-stains! Here is a stain upon the hat of a gentleman in company, that I'll take clean out, before he can order me a pint of ale."

"Hah!" cried Sikes starting up. "Give that back."

"I'll take it clean out, sir," replied the man, winking to the company, "before you can come across the room to get it. Gentlemen all, observe the dark stain upon

Oliver Twist

this gentleman's hat, no wider than a shilling, but thicker than a half-crown. Whether it is a wine-stain, fruit-stain, beer-stain, water-stain, paint-stain, pitch-stain, mud-stain, or blood-stain—”

The man got no further, for Sikes with a hideous imprecation overthrew the table, and tearing the hat from him, burst out of the house.

With the same perversity of feeling and irresolution that had fastened upon him, despite himself, all day, the murderer, finding that he was not followed, turned back up the town; then he went back again, and took the road which leads from Hatfield to St. Albans.

There was a shed in a field he passed, that offered shelter for the night. Before the door, were three tall poplar trees, which made it very dark within; and the wind moaned through them with a dismal wail. He *could not* walk on, till daylight came again; and here he stretched himself close to the wall.

Suddenly there arose upon the night-wind the noise of distant shouting, and the roar of voices mingled in alarm and wonder. Any sound of men in that lonely place, even though it conveyed a real cause of alarm, was something to him. He regained his strength and energy at the prospect of personal danger; and springing to his feet, rushed into the open air.

The broad sky seemed on fire. Rising into the air with showers of sparks, and rolling one above the other, were sheets of flame, lighting the atmosphere for miles round, and driving clouds of smoke in the direction where he stood. The shouts grew louder as new voices swelled the roar, and he could hear the cry of Fire! mingled with the ringing of an alarm-bell. The noise increased as he looked. There were people there—men and women—light, bustle. It was like new life to him. He darted onward—straight, headlong—dashing through brier and brake, and leaping gate and fence as madly as his dog, who careered with loud and sounding bark before him.

He came upon the spot. There were half-dressed figures tearing to and fro, some endeavouring to drag the frightened horses from the stables, others driving the cattle from the yard and out-houses, and others

Oliver Twist

coming laden from the burning pile, amidst a shower of falling sparks, and the tumbling down of red-hot beams. The apertures, where doors and windows stood an hour ago, disclosed a mass of raging fire ; walls rocked and crumbled into the burning well ; the molten lead and iron poured down, white hot, upon the ground. Women and children shrieked, and men encouraged each other with noisy shouts and cheers. The clanking of the engine-pumps, and the spitting and hissing of the water as it fell upon the blazing wood, added to the tremendous roar. He shouted, too, till he was hoarse ; and flying from memory and himself, plunged into the thickest of the throng.

Hither and thither he dived that night : now working at the pumps, and now hurrying through the smoke and flame, but never ceasing to engage himself wherever noise and men were thickest. Up and down the ladders, upon the roofs of buildings, over floors that quaked and trembled with his weight, under the ice of falling bricks and stones, in every part of that great fire was he ; but he bore a charmed life, and had neither scratch nor bruise, nor weariness nor thought, till morning dawned again, and only smoke and blackened ruins remained.

He passed near an engine where some men were seated, and they called to him to share in their refreshment. He took some bread and meat ; and as he drank a draught of beer, heard the firemen, who were from London, talking about the murder. "He has gone to Birmingham, they say," said one : "but they'll have him yet, for the scouts are out, and by to-morrow night there'll be a cry all through the country."

He hurried off, and walked till he almost dropped upon the ground ; then lay down in a lane, and had a long, but broken and uneasy sleep. He wandered on again, irresolute and undecided, and oppressed with the fear of another solitary night.

Suddenly, he took the desperate resolution of going back to London.

"There's somebody to speak to there, at all events," he thought. "A good hiding-place, too. They'll never expect to nab me there, after this country scent. Why

Oliver Twist

can't I lie by for a week or so, and, forcing blunt from Fagin, get abroad to France ? I'll risk it."

He acted upon this impulse without delay, and choosing the least frequented roads began his journey back, resolved to lie concealed within a short distance of the metropolis, and, entering it at dusk by a circuitous route, to proceed straight to that part of it which he had fixed on for his destination.

CHAPTER XL

THE twilight was beginning to close in, when Mr. Brownlow alighted from a hackney-coach at his own door, and knocked softly. The door being opened, a sturdy man got out of the coach and stationed himself on one side of the steps, while another man, who had been seated on the box, dismounted too, and stood upon the other side. At a sign from Mr. Brownlow, they helped out a third man, and taking him between them, hurried him into the house. This man was Monks.

They walked in the same manner up the stairs without speaking, and Mr. Brownlow, preceding them, led the way into a back-room. At the door of this apartment, Monks, who had ascended with evident reluctance, stopped. The two men looked to the old gentleman as if for instructions.

"He knows the alternative," said Mr. Brownlow. "If he hesitates or moves a finger but as you bid him, drag him into the street, call for the aid of the police, and impeach him as a felon in my name."

"How dare you say this of me ?" asked Monks.

"How dare you urge me to it, young man ?" replied Mr. Brownlow, confronting him with a steady look. "Are you mad enough to leave this house ? Unhand him. There, sir. You are free to go, and we to follow. But I warn you, that the instant you set foot in the street, that instant will I have you apprehended on a charge of fraud and robbery."

Oliver Twist

Monks was plainly disconcerted, and alarmed besides. He hesitated.

"You will decide quickly," said Mr. Brownlow, with perfect firmness and composure. "If you wish me to prefer my charges publicly, once more, I say, you know the way. If not, and you appeal to my forbearance, and the mercy of those you have deeply injured, seat yourself, without a word, in that chair. It has waited for you two whole days."

Monks muttered some unintelligible words, but wavered still.

"You will be prompt," said Mr. Brownlow. "A word from me, and the alternative has gone for ever."

Monks looked at the old gentleman, with an anxious eye; but, reading in his countenance nothing but severity and determination, walked into the room, and, shrugging his shoulders, sat down.

"Lock the door on the outside," said Mr. Brownlow to the attendants, "and come when I ring."

The men obeyed, and the two were left alone together.

"This is pretty treatment, sir," said Monks, throwing down his hat and cloak, "from my father's oldest friend."

"It is because I was your father's oldest friend, young man," returned Mr. Brownlow; "it is because the hopes and wishes of young and happy years were bound up with him, and that fair creature of his blood and kindred who rejoined her God in youth, and left me here a solitary, lonely man; it is because he knelt with me beside his only sister's death-bed when he was yet a boy, on the morning that would—but Heaven willed otherwise—have made her my young wife; it is because even the sight of you brings with it old thoughts of him; it is because of all these things that I am moved to treat you gently now—yes, Edward Leesford, even now—and blush for your unworthiness who bear the name."

"What has the name to do with it?" asked the other, after contemplating, half in silence, and half in dogged wonder, the agitation of his companion. "What is the name to me?"

"Nothing," replied Mr. Brownlow, "nothing to you. But it was *hers*, and even at this distance of time brings back to me, an old man, the glow and thrill which I once

Oliver Twist

felt, only to hear it repeated by a stranger. I am very glad you have changed it—very—very.”

“ This is all mighty fine,” said Monks (to retain his assumed designation) after a long silence. “ But what do you want with me ? ”

“ You have a brother,” said Mr. Brownlow, rousing himself: “ a brother, the whisper of whose name in your ear when I came behind you in the street, was, in itself, almost enough to make you accompany me hither, in wonder and alarm.”

“ I have no brother,” replied Monks. “ You know I was an only child.”

“ Attend to what I do know, and you may not,” said Mr. Brownlow. “ I shall interest you by and by. I know that of the wretched marriage, into which family pride forced your unhappy father when a mere boy, you were the sole issue. But I also know the misery of that ill-assorted union.”

“ Well, they were separated,” said Monks, “ and what of that ? ”

“ When they had been separated for some time,” returned Mr. Brownlow, “ and your mother had utterly forgotten the young husband ten good years her junior, who, with prospects blighted, lingered on at home, he fell among new friends. These new friends were a naval officer retired from active service, whose wife had died some half a year before, and left him with two children. They were both daughters; one a beautiful creature of nineteen, and the other a mere child of two or three years old.”

“ What’s this to me ? ” asked Monks.

“ They resided,” said Mr. Brownlow, without seeming to hear the interruption, “ in a part of the country to which your father in his wandering had repaired, and where he had taken up his abode. Acquaintance, intimacy, friendship, fast followed on each other. Your father was gifted as few men are. As the old officer knew him more and more, he grew to love him. I would that it had ended there. His daughter did the same.”

The old gentleman paused; Monks was biting his lips, with his eyes fixed upon the floor; seeing this, he immediately resumed :

Oliver Twist

“ The end of a year found him contracted, solemnly contracted, to that daughter.”

“ Your tale is of the longest,” observed Monks, moving restlessly in his chair.

“ It is a true tale of grief and trial, and sorrow, young man,” returned Mr. Brownlow, “ and such tales usually are ; if it were one of unmixed joy and happiness, it would be very brief. At length one of those rich relations to strengthen whose interest and importance your father had been sacrificed, died, and to repair the misery he had been instrumental in occasioning, left him *his* panacea for all griefs—Money. It was necessary that he should immediately repair to Rome, whither this man had sped for health, and where he had died, leaving his affairs in great confusion. He went ; was seized with mortal illness there ; was followed, the moment the intelligence reached Paris, by your mother who carried you with her ; he died the day after her arrival, leaving no will—*no will*—so that the whole property fell to her and you.”

At this part of the recital Monks held his breath, and listened with a face of intense eagerness, though his eyes were not directed towards the speaker.

“ Before he went abroad, and as he passed through London on his way,” said Mr. Brownlow, slowly, and fixing his eyes upon the other’s face, “ he came to me, and left with me, among some other things, a picture—a portrait painted by himself—a likeness of this poor girl—which he did not wish to leave behind, and could not carry forward on his hasty journey. He confided to me his intention to convert his whole property, at any loss, into money, and, having settled on his wife and you a portion of his recent acquisition, to fly the country and never see it more. Even from me, his old and early friend, he withheld any more particular confession, promising to write and tell me all, and after that to see me once again, for the last time on earth. Alas ! *That* was the last time. I had no letter, and I never saw him more.

“ When your brother,” continued Mr. Brownlow, drawing nearer to the other’s chair, “ when your brother : a feeble, ragged, neglected child : was cast in my way

Oliver Twist

by a stronger hand than chance, and rescued by me from a life of vice and infamy—”

“ What ? ” cried Monks.

“ By me,” said Mr. Brownlow. “ I told you I should interest you before long. When he was rescued by me, then, and lay recovering from sickness in my house, his strong resemblance to this picture I have spoken of, struck me with astonishment. I need not tell you he was snared away before I knew his history—”

“ Why not ? ” asked Monks hastily.

“ Because you know it well.”

“ I ! ”

“ Denial to me is vain,” replied Mr. Brownlow. “ I shall show you that I know more than that.”

“ You — you — can’t prove anything against me,” stammered Monks. “ I defy you to do it ! ”

“ We shall see,” returned the old gentleman with a searching glance. “ I lost the boy, and no efforts of mine could recover him. Your mother being dead, I knew that you alone could solve the mystery if anybody could, and as when I had last heard of you you were on your own estate in the West Indies, I made the voyage. You had left it, months before, and were supposed to be in London, but no one could tell where. I returned. Your agents had no clue to your residence. You came and went, they said, as strangely as you had ever done: sometimes for days together and sometimes not for months: keeping to all appearance the same low haunts and mingling with the same infamous herd who had been your associates when a fierce ungovernable boy. I wearied them with new applications. I paced the streets by night and day, but until two hours ago all my efforts were fruitless, and I never saw you for an instant.”

“ And now you do see me,” said Monks, rising boldly, “ what then ? ”

“ You have a brother,” replied Mr. Brownlow; “ you know it, and him. There was a will, which your mother destroyed. It contained a reference to some child, which child was accidentally encountered by you, when your suspicions were first awakened by his resemblance to his father. You repaired to the place of his birth.

Oliver Twist

There existed proofs—proofs long suppressed—of his birth and parentage. Those proofs were destroyed by you, and now, in your own words to your accomplice the Jew, ‘*the only proofs of the boy’s identity lie at the bottom of the river, and the old hag that received them from the mother is in her coffin.*’ Every word that has passed between you and this detested villain, is known to me. Shadows on the wall have caught your whispers, and brought them to my ear; the sight of the persecuted child has turned vice itself, and given it the courage and almost the attributes of virtue. Murder has been done, to which you were morally if not really a party.”

“No, no,” interposed Monks. “I—I—know nothing of that; I was going to inquire the truth of the story when you overtook me. I didn’t know the cause. I thought it was a common quarrel.”

“It was the partial disclosure of your secrets,” replied Mr. Brownlow. “Will you disclose the whole?”

“Yes, I will.”

“Set your hand to a statement of truth and facts, and repeat it before witnesses?”

“That I promise too.”

“Remain quietly here, until such a document is drawn up, and proceed with me to such a place as I may deem most advisable, for the purpose of attesting it?”

“If you insist upon that, I’ll do that also,” replied Monks.

“You must do more than that,” said Mr. Brownlow. “Make restitution to an innocent and unoffending child. You have not forgotten the provisions of the will. Carry them into execution so far as your brother is concerned, and then go where you please. In this world you need meet no more.”

While Monks was pacing up and down, meditating with dark and evil looks on this proposal and the possibilities of evading it: torn by his fears on the one hand and his hatred on the other: the door was hurriedly unlocked, and a gentleman (Mr. Losberne) entered the room in violent agitation.

“The man will be taken,” he cried. “He will be taken to-night!”

“The murderer?” asked Mr. Brownlow.

Oliver Twist

"Yes, yes," replied the other. "His dog has been seen lurking about some old haunt, and there seems little doubt that his master either is, or will be, there, under cover of the darkness. Spies are hovering about in every direction. A reward of a hundred pounds is proclaimed by Government to-night."

"Fagin," said Mr. Brownlow; "what of him?"

"When I last heard, he had not been taken, but he will be, or is, by this time. They're sure of him."

"Have you made up your mind?" asked Mr. Brownlow, in a low voice; of Monks.

"Yes," he replied. "You—you—will be secret with me?"

"I will. Remain here till I return. It is your only hope of safety."

They left the room, and the door was again locked.

CHAPTER XLI

NEAR to that part of the Thames on which the church at Rotherhithe abuts, where the buildings on the banks are dirtiest and the vessels on the river blackest with the dust of colliers and the smoke of close-built low-roofed houses, there exists the filthiest, the strangest, the most extraordinary of the many localities that are hidden in London, wholly unknown, even by name, to the great mass of its inhabitants.

To reach this place, the visitor has to penetrate through a maze of close, narrow, and muddy streets, thronged by the roughest and poorest of waterside people. Arriving, at length, in streets remoter and less-frequented, he walks beneath tottering house-fronts, projecting over the pavement, dismantled walls that seem to totter as he passes, chimneys half crushed half hesitating to fall, windows guarded by rusty iron bars that time and dirt have almost eaten away, every imaginable sign of desolation and neglect.

In such a neighbourhood, beyond Dockhead in the Borough of Southwark, stands Jacob's Island, sur-

Oliver Twist

rounded by a muddy ditch, six or eight feet deep and fifteen or twenty wide when the tide is in, once called Mill Pond, but known in the days of this story as Folly Ditch. It is a creek or inlet from the Thames, and can always be filled at high water by opening the sluices at the Lead Mills from which it took its old name.

In Jacob's Island, the warehouses are roofless and empty; the walls are crumbling down; the windows are windows no more; the doors are falling into the streets; the chimneys are blackened, but they yield no smoke. Thirty or forty years ago, it was a thriving place; but now it is a desolate island indeed. The houses have no owners; they are broken open, and entered upon by those who have the courage; and there they live, and there they die.

In an upper room of one of these houses—a detached house of fair size, ruinous in other respects, but strongly defended at door and window: of which house the back commanded the ditch—there were assembled three men, who, regarding each other every now and then with looks expressive of perplexity and expectation, sat for some time in profound and gloomy silence. One of these was Toby Crackit, another Mr. Chitling, and the third a robber of fifty years, whose nose had been almost beaten in, in some old scuffle, and whose face bore a frightful scar which might probably be traced to the same occasion. This man was a returned transport, and his name was Kags.

"I wish," said Toby turning to Mr. Chitling, "that you had picked out some other crib when the two old ones got too warm, and had not come here, my fine feller."

"Why didn't you, blunder-head?" said Kags.

"Well, I thought you'd have been a little more glad to see me than this," replied Mr. Chitling, with a melancholy air.

"Why look'e, young gentleman," said Toby, "when a man keeps himself so very ex-clusive as I have done, and by that means has a snug house over his head with nobody a-prying and smelling about it, it's rather a startling thing to have the honour of a wisit from a young gentleman circumstanced as you are."

Oliver Twist

“Especially, when the exclusive young man has got a friend stopping with him, that’s arrived sooner than was expected from foreign parts, and is too modest to want to be presented to the Judges on his return,” added Mr. Kags.

There was a short silence, after which Toby Crackit, seeming to abandon as hopeless any further effort to maintain his usual devil-may-care swagger, turned to Chitling and said,

“When was Fagin took then?”

“Just at dinner-time—two o’clock this afternoon. Charley and I made our lucky up the wash’us chimney, and Bolter got into the empty water-butt, head downwards; but his legs were so precious long that they stuck out at the top, and so they took him too.”

“Wot’s come of young Bates?” demanded Kags.

“He hung about, not to come over here afore dark, but he’ll be here soon,” replied Chitling. “There’s nowhere else to go to now, for the people at the Cripples are all in custody.”

“This is a sinash,” observed Toby biting his lips. “There’s more than one will go with this.”

They sat in silence with their eyes fixed upon the floor, when a patterning noise was heard upon the stairs, and Sikes’s dog bounded into the room.

“What’s the meaning of this?” said Toby. “He can’t be coming here. I—I—hope not.”

“If he was coming here, he’d have come with the dog,” said Kags, stooping down to examine the animal, who lay panting on the floor. “Here! Give us some water for him; he has run himself faint.”

“He’s drunk it all up, every drop,” said Chitling after watching the dog some time in silence. “Covered with mud—lame—half-blind—he must have come a long way.”

It being now dark, the shutter was closed, and a candle lighted and placed upon the table. The terrible events of the last two days had made a deep impression on all three, increased by the danger and uncertainty of their own position. They drew their chairs closer together, starting at every sound. They spoke little, and that in whispers.

Oliver Twist

They had sat thus, some time, when suddenly they heard a hurried knocking at the door below.

"Young Bates," said Kags, looking angrily round, to check the fear he felt himself.

The knocking came again. No, it wasn't he. He never knocked like that.

Crackit went to the window, and shaking all over, drew in his head. There was no need to tell them who it was; his pale face was enough. The dog too was on the alert in an instant, and ran whining to the door.

"We must let him in," he said, taking up the candle.

"Isn't there any help for it?" asked the other man in a hoarse voice.

"None. He *must* come in."

Crackit went down to the door, and returned followed by a man with the lower part of his face buried in a handkerchief, and another tied over his head under his hat. He drew them slowly off. Blanched face, sunken eyes, hollow cheeks, beard of three days' growth, wasted flesh, short thick breath; it was the very ghost of Sikes.

He laid his hand upon a chair which stood in the middle of the room, dragged it back close to the wall—as close as it would go—and sat down.

Not a word had been exchanged. He looked from one to another in silence. If an eye were furtively raised and met his, it was instantly averted. When his hollow voice broke silence, they all three started. They seemed never to have heard its tones before.

"How came that dog here?" he asked.

"Alone. Three hours ago."

"To-night's paper says that Fagin's took. Is it true, or a lie?"

"True."

They were silent again.

"You that keep this house," said Sikes, turning his face to Crackit, "do you mean to sell me, or to let me lie here till this hunt is over?"

"You may stop here, if you think it safe," returned the person addressed, after some hesitation.

Sikes carried his eyes slowly up the wall behind him.

"Who's that knocking?" he asked.

Crackit intimated, by a motion of his hand as he left

Oliver Twist

the room, that there was nothing to fear; and directly came back with Charley Bates behind him. Sikes sat opposite the door, so that the moment the boy entered the room he encountered his figure.

"Toby," said the boy falling back, as Sikes turned his eyes towards him, "why didn't you tell me this, downstairs?"

There had been something so tremendous in the shrinking off of the three, that the wretched man was willing to propitiate even this lad. Accordingly he nodded, and made as though he would shake hands with him.

"Let me go into some other room," said the boy, retreating still farther.

"Charley!" said Sikes, stepping forward. "Don't you—don't you know me?"

"Don't come nearer me," answered the boy, still retreating, and looking, with horror in his eyes, upon the murderer's face. "You monster!"

The man stopped half-way, and they looked at each other; but Sikes's eyes sunk gradually to the ground.

"Witness you three," cried the boy shaking his clenched fist, and becoming more and more excited as he spoke. "Witness you three—I'm not afraid of him—if they come here after him, I'll give him up; I will. I tell you out at once. He may kill me for it if he likes, or if he dares, but if I am here I'll give him up. Murder! Help! If there's the pluck of a man among you three, you'll help me. Murder! Help! Down with him!"

Pouring out these cries, and accompanying them with violent gesticulation, the boy actually threw himself, single-handed, upon the strong man, and in the intensity of his energy and the suddenness of his surprise, brought him heavily to the ground.

The three spectators seemed quite stupefied. They offered no interference, and the boy and man rolled on the ground together; the former, heedless of the blows that showered upon him, wrenching his hands tighter and tighter in the garments about the murderer's breast, and never ceasing to call for help with all his might.

The contest, however, was too unequal to last long.

Oliver Twist

Sikes had him down, and his knee was on his throat, when Crackit pulled him back with a look of alarm, and pointed to the window. There were lights gleaming below, voices in loud and earnest conversation, the tramp of hurried footsteps—endless they seemed in number—crossing the nearest wooden bridge. The gleam of lights increased; the footsteps came more thickly and noisily on. Then, came a loud knocking at the door, and then a hoarse murmur from such a multitude of angry voices as would have made the boldest quail.

“Help!” shrieked the boy in a voice that rent the air. “He’s here! Break down the door!”

“In the King’s name,” cried the voices without; and the hoarse cry arose again, but louder.

“Break down the door!” screamed the boy. “I tell you they’ll never open it. Run straight to the room where the light is. Break down the door!”

Strokes, thick and heavy, rattled upon the door and lower window-shutters as he ceased to speak, and a loud huzzah burst from the crowd.

“Open the door of some place where I can lock him up,” cried Sikes fiercely; running to and fro, and dragging the boy, now, as easily as if he were an empty sack. “That door. Quick!” He flung him in, bolted it, and turned the key. “Is the downstairs door fast?”

“Double-locked and chained,” replied Crackit, who, with the other two men, still remained quite helpless and bewildered.

“The panels—are they strong?”

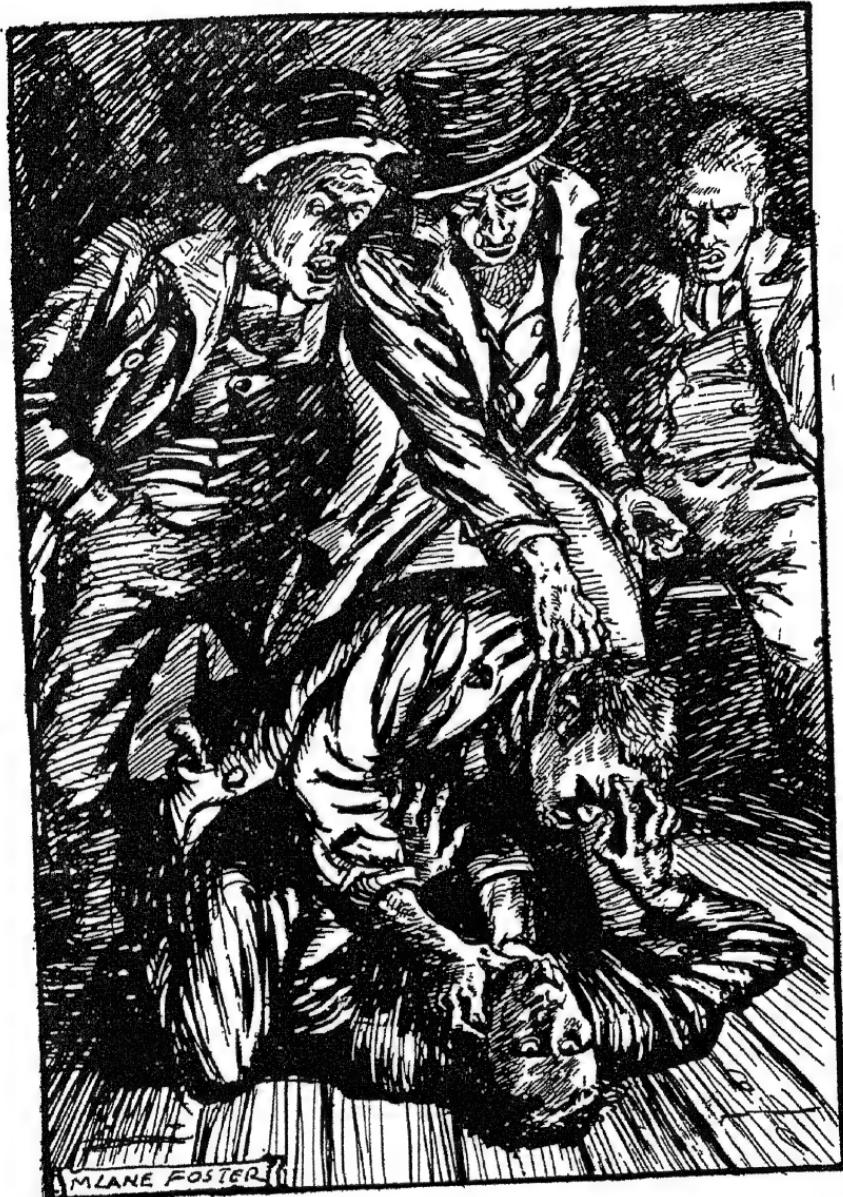
“Lined with sheet-iron.”

“And the windows too?”

“Yes, and the windows.”

“Do your worst!” cried the desperate Russian, throwing up the sash and menacing the crowd. “I’ll cheat you yet!”

Of all the terrific yells that ever fell on mortal ears, none could exceed the cry of the infuriated throng. Some shouted to those who were nearest to set the house on fire; others roared to the officers to shoot him dead. Some called for ladders, some for sledge-hammers; some ran with torches to and fro as if to seek them, and still



MLANE FOSTER

THE CONTEST, HOWEVER, WAS TOO UNEQUAL TO LAST LONG.

Oliver Twist

came back and roared again ; some among the boldest attempted to climb up by the water-spout and crevices in the wall ; and all waved to and fro, in the darkness beneath, like a field of corn moved by an angry wind : and joined from time to time in one loud furious roar.

“The tide,” cried the murderer, as he staggered back into the room, and shut the faces out, “the tide was in as I came up. Give me a rope, a long rope. They’re all in front. I may drop into the Folly Ditch, and clear off that way. Give me a rope, or I shall do three more murders and kill myself.”

The panic-stricken men pointed to where such articles were kept ; the murderer, hastily selecting the longest and strongest cord, hurried up to the house-top.

All the windows in the rear of the house had been long ago bricked up, except one small trap in the room where the boy was locked, and that was too small even for the passage of his body. But, from this aperture, he had never ceased to call on those without, to guard the back ; and thus, when the murderer emerged at last on the house-top by the door in the roof, a loud shout proclaimed the fact to those in front, who immediately began to pour round, pressing upon each other in an unbroken stream.

He planted a board, which he had carried up with him for the purpose, so firmly against the door that it must be matter of great difficulty to open it from the inside ; and creeping over the tiles, looked over the low parapet.

The water was out, and the ditch a bed of mud.

The crowd had been hushed during these few moments, watching his motions and doubtful of his purpose, but the instant they perceived it and knew it was defeated, they raised a cry of triumphant execration. The houses on the opposite side of the ditch had been entered by the mob ; sashes were thrown up, or torn bodily out ; there were tiers and tiers of faces in every window ; cluster upon cluster of people clinging to every house-top. Each little bridge (and there were three in sight) bent beneath the weight of the crowd upon it. Still the current poured on to find some nook or hole from

Oliver Twist

which to vent their shouts, and only for an instant see the wretch.

At this moment the word was passed among the crowd that the door was forced at last, and that he who had first called for the ladder had mounted into the room. The stream abruptly turned, as this intelligence ran from mouth to mouth ; and the people at the windows, seeing those upon the bridges pouring back, quitted their stations, and running into the street, joined the concourse that now thronged pell-mell to the spot they had left : each man crushing and striving with his neighbour, and all panting with impatience to get near the door, and look upon the criminal as the officers brought him out.

The man had shrunk down, thoroughly quelled by the ferocity of the crowd, and the impossibility of escape ; but seeing this sudden change with no less rapidity than it had occurred, he sprang upon his feet, determined to make one last effort for his life by dropping into the ditch, and, at the risk of being stoned, endeavouring to creep away in the darkness and confusion.

Roused into new strength and energy, and stimulated by the noise within the house which announced that an entrance had really been effected, he set his foot against the stack of chimneys, fastened one end of the rope tightly and firmly round it, and with the other made a strong running noose by the aid of his hands and teeth. He could let himself down by the cord to within a less distance of the ground than his own height, and had his knife ready in his hand to cut it then and drop.

At the very instant when he brought the loop over his head previous to slipping it beneath his arm-pits, he lost his balance and tumbled over the parapet. The noose was on his neck. It ran up with his weight, tight as a bowstring, and swift as the arrow it speeds. He fell for five-and-thirty feet. There was a sudden jerk, a terrific convulsion of the limbs ; and there he hung, with the open knife clenched in his stiffening hand.

The old chimney quivered with the shock, but stood it bravely. A dog, which had lain concealed till now, ran backwards and forwards on the parapet with a dismal howl, and collecting himself for a spring, jumped for the

Oliver Twist

dead man's shoulders. Missing his aim, he fell into the ditch, turning completely over as he went ; and striking his head against a stone, dashed out his brains.

CHAPTER XLII

THE events narrated in the last chapter were yet but two days old, when Oliver found himself, at three o'clock in the afternoon, in a travelling-carriage rolling fast towards his native town. Mrs. Maylie, and Rose, and Mrs. Bedwin, and the good doctor, were with him : and Mr. Brownlow followed in a post-chaise, accompanied by one other person whose name had not been mentioned.

Oliver and the two ladies had been very carefully made acquainted by Mr. Brownlow with the nature of the admissions which had been forced from Monks ; and although they knew that the object of their present journey was to complete the work which had been so well begun, still the whole matter was enveloped in enough of doubt and mystery to leave them in endurance of the most intense suspense.

The same kind friend had, with Mr. Losberne's assistance, cautiously stopped all channels of communication through which they could receive intelligence of the dreadful occurrences that had so recently taken place. "It was quite true," he said, "that they must know them before long, but it might be at a better time than the present, and it could not be at a worse." So, they travelled on in silence : each busied with reflections on the subject which had brought them together : and no one disposed to give utterance to the thoughts which crowded upon all.

But if Oliver, under these influences, had remained silent while they journeyed towards his birth-place by a road he had never seen, how the whole current of his recollections ran back to old times, and what a crowd of emotions were wakened up in his breast, when they

Oliver Twist

turned into that which he had traversed on foot: a poor, houseless, wandering boy, without a friend to help him, or a roof to shelter his head.

As they approached the town, and at length drove through its narrow streets, it became matter of no small difficulty to restrain the boy within reasonable bounds. There was Sowerberry's the undertaker's just as it used to be, only smaller and less imposing in appearance than he remembered it—there were all the well-known shops and houses, with almost every one of which he had some slight incident connected—there was Gamsfield's cart, the very cart he used to have, standing at the old public-house door—there was the workhouse, the dreary prison of his youthful days, with its dismal windows frowning on the street—there was the same lean porter standing at the gate, at sight of whom Oliver involuntarily shrunk back, and then laughed at himself for being so foolish, then cried, then laughed again.

They drove straight to the door of the chief hotel (which Oliver used to stare up at, with awe, and think a mighty palace, but which had somehow fallen off in grandeur and size); and here was Mr. Grimwig all ready to receive them, kissing the young lady, and the old one too, when they got out of the coach, as if he were the grandfather of the whole party, all smiles and kindness, and not offering to eat his head—no, not once; not even when he contradicted a very old postboy about the nearest road to London, and maintained he knew it best, though he had only come that way once, and that time fast asleep. There was dinner prepared, and there were bedrooms ready, and everything was arranged as if by magic.

Notwithstanding all this, when the hurry of the first half-hour was over, the same silence and constraint prevailed that had marked their journey down. Mr. Brownlow did not join them at dinner, but remained in a separate room. The two other gentlemen hurried in and out with anxious faces, and, during the short intervals when they were present, conversed apart. Once, Mrs. Maylie was called away, and after being absent for nearly an hour, returned with eyes swollen with weeping. All these things made Rose and Oliver, who

Oliver Twist

were not in any new secrets, nervous and uncomfortable. They sat wondering, in silence ; or, if they exchanged a few words, spoke in whispers, as if they were afraid to hear the sound of their own voices.

At length, when nine o'clock had come, and they began to think they were to hear no more that night, Mr. Losberne and Mr. Grimwig entered the room, followed by Mr. Brownlow and a man whom Oliver almost shrieked with surprise to see ; for they told him it was his brother, and it was the same man he had met at the market-town. Monks cast a look of hate, which, even then, he could not dissemble, at the astonished boy, and sat down near the door. Mr. Brownlow, who had papers in his hand, walked to a table near which Rose and Oliver were seated.

"This is a painful task," said he, "but these declarations, which have been signed in London before many gentlemen, must be in substance repeated here. I would have spared you the degradation, but we must hear them from your own lips before we part, and you know why."

"Go on," said the person addressed, turning away his face. "Quick. I have almost done enough, I think. Don't keep me here."

"This child," said Mr. Brownlow, drawing Oliver to him, and laying his hand upon his head, "is your half-brother."

"Yes," said Monks, scowling at the trembling boy.

"He was born in this town," said Mr. Brownlow.

"In the workhouse of this town," was the sullen reply. "You have the story there." He pointed impatiently to the papers as he spoke.

"I must have it here, too," said Mr. Brownlow, looking round upon the listeners.

"Listen then ! You !" returned Monks. "His father being taken ill at Rome, was joined by his wife, my mother, from whom he had been long separated, who went from Paris and took me with her. He knew nothing of us, for his senses were gone, and he slumbered on till next day, when he died. Among the papers in his desk, were two, dated on the night his illness first came on,

Oliver Twist

directed to yourself"; he addressed himself to Mr. Brownlow; "and enclosed in a few short lines to you, with an intimation on the cover of the package that it was not to be forwarded till after he was dead. One of these papers was a letter to Agnes Fleming; the other a will."

"What of the letter?" asked Mr. Brownlow.

"The letter?—A sheet of paper crossed and crossed again, with a penitent confession, and prayers to God to help her. He told her all he had meant to do, if he had lived. He reminded her of the day he had given her the little locket and the ring with her Christian name engraved upon it, and a blank left for that which he hoped one day to have bestowed on her—prayed her yet to keep it, and wear it next her heart, as she had done before."

"The will," said Mr. Brownlow, as Oliver's tears fell fast.

Monks was silent.

"The will," said Mr. Brownlow, speaking for him, "was in the same spirit as the letter. He talked of miseries which his wife had brought upon him; of the rebellious disposition, vice, malice, and premature bad passions of you his only son, who had been trained to hate him; and left you, and your mother, each an annuity of eight hundred pounds. The bulk of his property he divided into two equal portions—one for Agnes Fleming, and the other for their child, if it should ever come of age. If it were a girl, it was to inherit the money unconditionally; but if a boy, only on the stipulation that in his minority he should never have stained his name with any public act of dishonour, meanness, cowardice, or wrong. He did this, he said, to mark his confidence in the mother, and his conviction that the child would share her gentle heart, and noble nature. If he were disappointed in this expectation, then the money was to come to you: for then, and not till then, when both children were equal, would he recognise your prior claim upon his purse."

"My mother," said Monks, in a louder tone, "burnt this will. The letter never reached its destination; but that, and other proofs, she kept. The girl's father fled

Oliver Twist

with his children into a remote corner of Wales, changing his very name that his friends might never know of his retreat ; and here, no great while afterwards, he was found dead in his bed. The girl had left her home, in secret, some weeks before ; he had searched for her, on foot, in every town and village near ; it was on the night when he returned home, assured that she had destroyed herself, that his old heart broke."

There was a short silence here, until Mr. Brownlow took up the thread of the narrative.

" Years after this," he said, " this man's—Edward Leeford's—mother came to me. He had left her, when only eighteen ; robbed her of jewels and money ; gambled, squandered, forged, and fled to London : where for two years he had associated with the lowest outcasts. She was sinking under a painful and incurable disease, and wished to recover him before she died. Inquiries were set on foot, and strict searches made. They were unavailing for a long time, but ultimately successful ; and he went back with her to France."

" There she died," said Monks, " after a lingering illness ; and, on her deathbed, she bequeathed these secrets to me. She would not believe that the girl had destroyed herself, but was filled with the impression that a child had been born, and was alive. I swore to her, if ever it crossed my path, to pursue it with the bitterest and most unrelenting animosity. She was right. He came in my way at last. I began well ; and, but for babbling tongues, I would have finished as I began ! "

Mr. Brownlow turned to the terrified group beside him, and explained that the Jew, who had been his old accomplice and confidant, had a large reward for keeping Oliver ensnared : of which some part was to be given up, in the event of his being rescued.

" The locket and ring ? " said Mr. Brownlow, turning to Monks.

" I bought them from the man and woman I told you of, who stole them from the nurse," answered Monks without raising his eyes. " You know what became of them."

Mr. Brownlow merely nodded to Mr. Grimwig, who,

Oliver Twist

disappearing with great alacrity, shortly returned, pushing in Mrs. Bumble, and dragging her unwilling consort after him.

"Do my hi's deceive me!" cried Mr. Bumble, with ill-feigned enthusiasm, "or is that little Oliver? Oh O-li-ver, if you know'd how I've been a-grieving for you—"

"Hold your tongue, fool," murmured Mrs. Bumble.

"Isn't natur, natur, Mrs. Bumble?" remonstrated the workhouse master. "Can't I be supposed to feel—I as brought him up porochially—when I see him a-setting here, among ladies and gentlemen of the very affablest description! I always loved that boy as if he'd been my—my—my own grandfather," said Mr. Bumble, halting for an appropriate comparison.

"Come, sir," said Mr. Grimwig, tartly; "suppress your feelings."

"I will do my endeavours, sir," replied Mr. Bumble. "How do you do, sir? I hope you are very well."

This salutation was addressed to Mr. Brownlow, who had stepped up to within a short distance of the respectable couple. He inquired, as he pointed to Monks,

"Do you know that person?"

"No," replied Mrs. Bumble flatly.

"Perhaps *you* don't?" said Mr. Brownlow, addressing her spouse.

"I never saw him in all my life," said Mr. Bumble.

"Nor sold him anything, perhaps?"

"No," replied Mrs. Bumble.

"You never had, perhaps, a certain gold locket and ring?" said Mr. Brownlow.

"Certainly not," replied the matron. "Why are we brought here to answer to such nonsense as this?"

Again Mr. Brownlow nodded to Mr. Grimwig; and again that gentleman limped away with extraordinary readiness. But not again did he return with a stout man and wife; for this time, he led in two palsied women, who shook and tottered as they walked.

"You shut the door the night old Sally died," said

Oliver Twist

the foremost one, raising her shrivelled hand, "but you couldn't shut out the sound, nor stop the chinks."

"No, no," said the other, looking round her and wagging her toothless jaws. "No, no, no."

"We heard her try to tell you what she'd done, and saw you take a paper from her hand, and watched you too, next day, to the pawnbroker's shop," said the first.

"Would you like to see the pawnbroker himself?" asked Mr. Grimwig with a motion towards the door.

"No," replied the woman; "if he"—she pointed to Monks—"has been coward enough to confess, as I see he has, and you have sounded all these lugs till you have found the right ones, I have nothing more to say. *I did* sell them, and they're where you'll never get them. What then?"

"Nothing," replied Mr. Brownlow, "except that it remains for us to take care that neither of you is employed in a situation of trust again. You may leave the room."

"I hope," said Mr. Bumble, looking about him with great ruefulness, as Mr. Grimwig disappeared with the two old women: "I hope that this unfortunate little circumstance will not deprive me of my parochial office?"

"Indeed it will," replied Mr. Brownlow. "You may make up your mind to that, and think yourself well off besides."

"It was all Mrs. Bumble. She *would* do it," urged Mr. Bumble; first looking round to ascertain that his partner had left the room.

"That is no excuse," replied Mr. Brownlow. "You were present on the occasion of the destruction of these trinkets, and indeed are the more guilty of the two, in the eye of the law; for the law supposes that your wife acts under your direction."

"If the law supposes that," said Mr. Bumble, squeezing his hat emphatically in both hands, "the law is a ass—a idiot. If that's the eye of the law, the law is a bachelor; and the worst I wish the law is, that his eye may be opened by experience—by experience."

Oliver Twist

Laying *more* stress on the repetition of these two words, Mr. Bumble fixed his hat on very tight, and putting his hands in his pockets, followed his helpmate downstairs.

"Young lady," said Mr. Brownlow, turning to Rose, "give me your hand. Do not tremble. Do you know this young lady, sir?"

"Yes," replied Monks.

"I never saw you before," said Rose faintly.

"I have seen you often," returned Monks.

"The father of the unhappy Agnes had two daughters," said Mr. Brownlow. "What was the fate of the other—the child?"

"The child," replied Monks, "when her father died in a strange place, was taken by some wretched cottagers, who reared it as their own."

"Go on," said Mr. Brownlow, signing to Mrs. Maylie to approach. "Go on!"

"You couldn't find the spot to which these people had repaired," said Monks, "but where friendship fails, hatred will often force a way. My mother found it, after a year of cunning search—ay, and found the child."

"She took it, did she?"

"No. The people were poor and began to sicken—at least the man did—of their fine humanity; so she left it with them, giving them a small present of money which would not last long, and promised more, which she never meant to send. There the child dragged on an existence, miserable enough even to satisfy us, until a widow lady, residing then, at Chester, saw the girl by chance, pitied her, and took her home. I lost sight of her, two or three years ago, and saw her no more until a few months back."

"Do you see her now?"

"Yes. Leaning on your arm."

"But not the less my niece," cried Mrs. Maylie, folding the fainting girl in her arms; "not the less my dearest child. I would not lose her now, for all the treasures of the world. My sweet companion, my own dear girl!"

"The only friend I ever had," cried Rose, clinging

Oliver Twist

to her. "The kindest, best of friends. My heart will burst. I cannot bear all this."

"You have borne more, and have been, through all, the best and gentlest creature that ever shed happiness on every one she knew," said Mrs. Maylie, embracing her tenderly. "Come, come, my love, remember who this is who waits to clasp you in his arms, poor child ! See here—look, look, my dear ! "

"Not aunt," cried Oliver, throwing his arms about her neck ; "I'll never call her aunt—sister, my own dear sister, that something taught my heart to love so dearly from the first ! Rose, dear, darling Rose ! "

Let the tears which fell, and the broken words which were exchanged in the long close embrace between the orphans, be sacred. A father, sister, and mother, were gained, and lost, in that one moment. Joy and grief were mingled in the cup ; but there were no bitter tears : for even grief itself arose so softened, and clothed in such sweet and tender recollections, that it became a solemn pleasure, and lost all character of pain.

CHAPTER XLIII

THE fortunes of those who have figured in this tale are nearly closed. The little that remains to their historian to relate, is told in few and simple words.

Before three months had passed, Rose Fleming and Harry Maylie were married. Mrs. Maylie took up her abode with her son and daughter-in-law, to enjoy, during the tranquil remainder of her days, the greatest felicity that age and worth can know—the contemplation of the happiness of those on whom the warmest affections and tenderest cares of a well-spent life, have been unceasingly bestowed.

It appeared, on full and careful investigation, that if the wreck of property remaining in the custody of Monks (which had never prospered either in his hands

Oliver Twist

or in those of his mother) were equally divided between himself and Oliver, it would yield, to each, little more than three thousand pounds. By the provisions of his father's will, Oliver would have been entitled to the whole; but Mr. Brownlow, unwilling to deprive the elder son of the opportunity of retrieving his former vices and pursuing an honest career, proposed this mode of distribution, to which his young charge joyfully acceded.

Monks, still bearing that assumed name, retired with his portion to a distant part of the New World; where, having quickly squandered it, he once more fell into his old courses, and died in prison. As far from home, died the chief remaining members of his friend Fagin's gang.

Mr. Brownlow adopted Oliver as his son. Removing with him and the old housekeeper to within a mile of the house, where his dear friends, the Maylies, resided, he gratified the only remaining wish of Oliver's warm and earnest heart, and thus linked together a little society, whose condition approached as nearly to one of perfect happiness as can ever be known in this changing world.

Soon after the marriage of the young people, the worthy doctor returned to Chertsey, where, bereft of the presence of his old friends, he would have been discontented if his temperament had admitted of such a feeling; and would have turned quite peevish if he had known how. For two or three months, he contented himself with hinting that he feared the air began to disagree with him; then, finding that the place really no longer was, to him, what it had been, he settled his business on his assistant, took a bachelor's cottage outside the village where his friends lived, and instantaneously recovered. Here, he took to gardening, planting, fishing, carpentering, and various other pursuits of a similar kind: all undertaken with his characteristic impetuosity. In each and all, he has since become famous throughout the neighbourhood, as a most profound authority.

Before his removal, he had managed to contract a strong friendship for Mr. Grimwig, which that eccentric

Oliver Twist

gentleman cordially reciprocated. He is accordingly visited by Mr. Grimwig a great many times in the course of the year. On all such occasions, Mr. Grimwig plants, fishes, and carpenters, with great ardour ; doing everything in a very singular and unprecedented manner, but always maintaining, with his favourite asseveration, that his mode is the right one. It is a standing and very favourite joke, for Mr. Brownlow to rally him on his old prophecy concerning Oliver, and to remind him of the night on which they sat with the watch between them, waiting his return ; but Mr. Grimwig contends that he was right in the main, and, in proof thereof, remarks that Oliver *did not come back*, after all ; which always calls forth a laugh on his side, and increases his good humour.

Mr. and Mrs. Bumble, deprived of their situations, were gradually reduced to great indigence and misery, and finally became paupers in that very same work-house in which they had once lorded it over others. Mr. Bumble has been heard to say, that in this reverse and degradation, he has not even spirits to be thankful for being separated from his wife.

Master Charles Bates, appalled by Sikes's crime, fell into a train of reflection whether an honest life was not, after all, the best. Arriving at the conclusion that it certainly was, he turned his back upon the scenes of the past, resolved to amend it in some new sphere of action. He struggled hard, and suffered much, for some time ; but, having a contented disposition, and a good purpose, succeeded in the end ; and, from being a farmer's drudge, and a carrier's lad, he is now the merriest young grazier in all Northamptonshire.

How Mr. Brownlow went on, from day to day, filling the mind of his adopted child with stores of knowledge, and becoming attached to him, more and more, as his nature developed itself, and showed the thriving seeds of all he wished him to become—how he traced in him new traits of his early friend, that awakened in his own bosom old remembrances, melancholy and yet sweet and soothing—how the two orphans, tried by adversity, remembered its lessons in mercy to others, and mutual love, and fervent thanks to Him who had protected

Oliver Twist

and preserved them—these are all matters which need not to be told. I have said that they were truly happy ; and without strong affection and humanity of heart, and gratitude to that Being whose code is Mercy, and whose great attribute is Benevolence to all things that breathe, happiness can never be attained.